

Министерство образования и науки РФ  
Федеральное государственное бюджетное  
образовательное учреждение  
высшего профессионального образования  
«Удмуртский государственный университет»  
Институт языка и литературы

# **ENGLISH GRAMMAR FOR INTERNATIONAL RELATIONS STUDENTS**

Учебно-методическое пособие

Ижевск  
2015

УДК 811.111'36 (075.8)

ББК 81.432.1 – 2я7

Е 56

*Рекомендовано к изданию учебно-методическим комиссией ИЯЛ*

Рецензент : кандидат педагогических наук, доцент Е. В. Тарабаева

**Е 56 English Grammar for International Students = Грамматика английского языка для студентов - международников** : учебно-методическое пособие / сост. В. В. Неборская, М. А. Садыкова. – ФГБОУ ВПО «Удмуртский государственный университет», Ижевск, 2015. – 221 с.

Предлагаемое учебно-методическое пособие предназначено для студентов бакалавриата направления «Международные отношения» первого года обучения. Пособие построено на принципе компетентностного подхода и может быть использовано как для проведения аудиторных занятий по английскому языку, так и для самостоятельной работы студентов.

УДК 811.111'36 (075.8)

ББК 81.432.1 – 2я7

© Сост. В. В. Неборская,

М. А. Садыкова 2015

© ФГБОУ ВПО «Удмуртский

государственный университет», 2015

## Предисловие

Данное учебно-методическое пособие адресовано студентам бакалавриата направления «Международные отношения» первого года обучения и может быть использовано как для проведения практических занятий по дисциплине «Иностранный язык», так и для самостоятельной работы студентов.

Содержание настоящего учебно-методического пособия построено на основных положениях компетентностного подхода.

Цель пособия – формирование коммуникативной лингвистической компетенции посредством ознакомления с теоретическим материалом и выполнения упражнений, способствующих усвоению разнообразных грамматических правил и конструкций английского языка.

Пособие состоит из предисловия, семи глав и списка использованной литературы. Материал пособия строится по определенному алгоритму: основные теоретические положения английской грамматики подкреплены упражнениями, направленными на закрепление изученного грамматического материала, а также тестами для текущего контроля усвоения материала. Задания были подобраны из различных пособий и сборников упражнений по грамматике.

Теоретический материал может быть, как традиционно объяснен преподавателем на аудиторном занятии, так и изучен в ходе самостоятельной работы студентов. Включение теоретического блока в данное пособие предоставляет студентам возможность в любой момент обратиться к теории.

Выполнение практических упражнений может быть распределено на аудиторную и домашнюю работу с последующей проверкой преподавателем и выполнением тестовых заданий.

## ГЛАВА 1. ИМЯ СУЩЕСТВИТЕЛЬНОЕ

Правильное употребление артиклей в английском языке является достаточно сложным. Кроме довольно большого количества правил употребления артиклей, существует много исключений из правил, которые также следует знать и помнить.

### 1.1. Основные правила употребления артиклей

#### Употребление артиклей с именами нарицательными.

Неопределенный артикль употребляется:

- с исчисляемыми существительными в единственном числе, когда имеется в виду любой представитель данного класса лиц или предметов:

*They live in **a lovely house**.*

*I'm reading **a good book** at the moment.*

*She's expecting **a baby**.*

- когда существительное служит в предложении именной частью составного сказуемого и используется, чтобы описать, кем или чем является лицо или предмет, о котором говорится в предложении:

*My brother is **an engineer**.*

*That's **an instrument** for measuring distance.*

- когда существительное служит приложением:

*John Bolton, **a student** of our University, took the first place in the chess tournament.*

- если перед существительным, употребляемом в общем смысле, можно поставить слово **every**:

***A (= every) computer** can quickly make calculations, store and rearrange information.*

**Упр. 1.** Поставьте существительные во множественное число, сделав все необходимые преобразования в предложении.

1. A dog is an animal. 2. A potato is a vegetable. 3. A pencil is like a pen. 4. A ruler is a thin rectangular wooden or plastic strip. 5. A test-tube is a hollow glass tube. 6. A writer writes a book. 7. The man who is sitting there is my friend. 8. The girl in that room is my sister. 9. The boy does his

work well.

**Упр. 2.** Поставьте существительные в единственное число, сделав все необходимые преобразования в предложении.

1. Horses are animals. 2. Boots are kinds of shoes. 3. Watches are small clocks. 4. Novels are books. 5. Children are not always good. 6. Stockings are long socks. 7. Schools are large buildings.

**Упр. 3.** Поставьте **a/an**, где необходимо.

1. I haven't got ... computer. 2. I am not ... chemist, I am ... biologist. 3. You made ... very bad mistake. 4. It is ... convincing result. 5. Do you keep ... record of ... results? 6. I work in ... theoretical research team. 7. I've got ... very good idea. 8. It is ... standard method.

**Упр. 4.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. He's looking for ... plain shirt, but all ... shirts are striped. 2. I'm looking for ... pair of ... black pants. 3. She's looking for ... blouse. Polka-dot ... blouses are very popular this ... summer. 4. I bought ... new hat yesterday. ... shop assistant said it was ... latest style. 5. I want to ask you to accompany me to ... shop. I must buy ... dress. 6. Where did you buy this overcoat? — I bought it at ... big store in Nevsky Prospect on ... Tuesday. 7. My sister bought ... blue hat on ... Wednesday. ... colour suits her very nicely as she has got ... blue eyes. 8. I must buy ... pair of ... new gloves. 9. Where is ... shoe department? — It is on ... third floor. 10. I think ... coat is a little tight. 11. We came to ... big tailor's shop to find out if we could have ... business suit made to order. 12. I don't like ... hat you have chosen. ... colour is not becoming to you. 13. Here is ... department of ready-made clothes. Let's go in and see if we can buy ... nice pair of ... trousers for you. 14. I am going to give him ... silk tie as ... birthday present. He likes ... ties.

Определенный артикль употребляется:

- перед существительными в единственном или множественном числе, когда из ситуации или контекста ясно, какое именно лицо или предмет имеется в виду:

***The room** was in a mess. **The books** were on the floor and on the chairs.*

*Where is **the key**?*

*Mind **the baby**! She is near the fire.*

- перед существительными, являющимися единственными в своем роде или в данной обстановке (*the Queen, the Earth, the Atlantic, etc.*):

***The sun** was getting warmer.*

*When goods have been loaded on a ship, **the captain** signs a receipt called a bill of lading.*

- перед названием определенных общественных мест, если они употребляются в общем смысле:

*I went to **the theatre** last night.*

*I have to go to the post office.*

**Но:** *There isn't **a theatre** in this town. Where is **a post office**?*

- с существительными в единственном числе для обозначения целого класса предметов:

***The thermometer** becomes useless if the fluid in it either freezes or boils.*

***The telephone** was invented in the 19-th century.*

***The pine** grows in northern countries.*

Однако в этих случаях артикль не употребляется со словом **man**. Слово **woman** чаще употребляется с определенным артиклем, хотя может употребляться и без артикля:

*Woman is man's helpmate.*

Определенный артикль может заменить указательные местоимения **this** и **that**. Иногда его следует перевести словом "этот":

*He is going to take a post-graduate course. I like **the idea**.*

**Упр. 5.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. Pete has ... small family. He has ... father and ... mother. He has no ... brother, but he has ... sister. His sister is ... pupil. She is ... good girl. She has ... many Russian books, but she has no ... English books. 2. There is ... writing desk in ... room. ... writing desk is good. There is ... lamp on ...

writing desk. 3. My uncle has ... large family. They are six in ... family. 4. My father is ... engineer. He works in ... big factory. 5. We have ... good library. Our books are in ... big bookcase. 6. Is your ... sister married? 7. What do you do after ... breakfast? — I go to ... school. 8. When do you come ... home? — I come ... home at ... half past two. 9. Do you like to watch ... TV in ... evening? 10. He watches ... television all day. I never do it. I can't watch ... TV very often. But tonight I can spend ... evening in ... front of ... box, because there is ... very exciting ... film on. It is "My Fair Lady" with Rex Harrison and Audrey Hepburn. I love it. 11. We bought... new telly last week. 12. Is there anything good on ... telly tonight?

**Упр. 6.** Поставьте **the**, где необходимо.

1. Which city is ... capital of ... your country? 2. What is ... largest city in ... world? 3. Our apartment is on ... third floor. 4. Help! Fire! Somebody, call ... fire brigade. 5. Who was ... first man to walk on ... moon? 6. "Where is ... your dictionary?" "It's on ... top shelf on ... right." 7. We live in ... country, about five miles from ... nearest village. 8. Prime Minister is ... most important person in ... British government. 9. I don't know everybody in ... this photograph. Who is ... man on ... left? 10. It was a very nice hotel but I don't remember ... name. 11. I didn't like her ... first time I met her.

**Упр. 7.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. I turned off ... light, opened ... door and went out. 2. Excuse me, can I ask ... question, please? 3. Alan is ... best player in our football team. 4. How far is it from here to ... airport? 5. Enjoy your holiday and don't forget to send me ... postcard! 6. Have you got ... ticket for ... concert tomorrow night? 7. Yesterday I bought ... jacket and ... shirt. ... jacket was cheap but ... shirt was expensive. 8. What is ... name of ... director of ... film we saw ... last night? 9. "Where are ... children?" "They're in ... garden." 10. My sister's ... teacher in ... school near Leicester. She has three children, two girls and ... boy. ... girls are in her class at school, but ... boy isn't old enough for school yet. 11. Jane and Bill are ... very nice couple. She has ... clothes shop, and he works in ... office in ... centre of

town. 12. "Where are my shoes?" "On ... floor in ... kitchen." 13. "How much are the driving lessons?" "Fifteen pounds ... hour." 14. When you come to bed, can you put ... cat out and turn off ... light? 15. I went to ... restaurant last night. 16. What's ... name of ... restaurant we went to last night?

**Упр. 8.** Выберите правильный вариант употребления артикля **the**.

1. *Potatoes/ The potatoes* are not expensive. 2. This is a good meal. *Potatoes/ The potatoes* are very nice. 3. Everybody needs *friends /the friends*. 4. Jan doesn't go to *parties/ the parties* very often. 5. *Children/ The children* learn *things/ the things* very quickly. 6. I enjoy eating in *restaurants/ the restaurants*. 7. I enjoy taking *photographs/ the photographs*. It's my hobby. 8. I must show you *photographs/ the photographs* I took when I was on holiday.

**Упр. 9.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

Here is... large window. Through ... window we can see ... room. Opposite ... window there is ... door. On ... door there is ... curtain. In ... corner of ... room there is ... round table. On it we can see ... books and ... telephone. There is ... bookshelf over ... table. On ... bookshelf we can see ... newspapers and ... book by ... Jack London. There are ... two ... pictures in ... room. One ... picture is small, ... other picture is very large. There are ... two bookcases in ... room. ... bookcases are full of ... books. There is ... large sofa in ... room. On ... sofa we can see ... bag. Whose ... bag is that? There is no ... bed in ... room. On ... small table near ... window there are ... flowers and ... glass of ... water. In ... front of ... window we can see ... armchair. It is ... comfortable ... armchair.

**Упр. 10.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

... English king Richard the Lionheart was ... tall, strong man. He was very proud of his strength and liked to show ... people how strong he was. Once, as he was riding on ... horseback in ... countryside, his horse lost ... shoe. Luckily he was not far from ... village and soon he found ... blacksmith. "Give me ... good horseshoe," he said to ... man. ... blacksmith gave



... king ... horseshoe. Richard took it in his hand and broke it in two. "This horseshoe is no good," he said, "give me ... better one." ... blacksmith did not say ... word. He gave ... king ... other horseshoe, but Richard broke it, too. The blacksmith gave him a third shoe. This time Richard was satisfied and ordered ... blacksmith to shoe his horse. When ... work was done, Richard offered ... man ... coin. ... blacksmith took ... coin between his fingers and broke it in two. Now it was Richard's turn to be surprised. He took ... larger coin out of his pocket and handed it to ... blacksmith. ... man broke it, too, saying, "This coin is no good, give me ... better one." Richard smiled and gave ... man ... gold coin.

### **Другие случаи употребления неопределенного артикля**

В некоторых случаях неопределенный артикль сохранил значение числительного *one*.

*He did not say **a word**.*

*The velocity of light is 186,300 miles **a second**.*

*The case weighs **a (one) hundred pounds**.*

***A stitch** in time saves nine.*

Неопределенный артикль обычно стоит перед существительным или его определением:

- в восклицательных предложениях типа:

*What **a beautiful picture**!*

*What **a clever man**!*

- перед исчисляемым существительным в единственном числе после *such*, *quite* и *rather*:

*It is **rather a long story**.*

*She is **such a clever girl**!*

Неопределенный артикль может стоять между прилагательным и существительным в единственном числе, если ему предшествуют усилительные частицы и местоимения, типа *what*, *such*, *many*, *quite*, *rather*, *so* и *too*:

*It is not so simple **a problem** as it seems.*

*It is too urgent **a matter** to postpone.*

*Only later was it discovered **what fruitful a theory** it was.*

**Ho:** *Such a laborious procedure is obviously not suitable for routine identifications.*

**Упр. 11.** Поставьте **a/an**, где необходимо.

1. It is ... pleasure to do ... business with such ... efficient organization. 2. I have ... headache. 3. I have ... pain in my shoulder. 4. You must be strong in ... mind and body. 5. If they had ... mind to, they could easily get it published. 6. Oh, I know there's no danger, but I'm ... little frightened all the same. 7. It is possible to make ... very good living from being a businessman. 8. The quality of ... urban living has been damaged by excessive noise levels. 9. He was one of ... few men of science who never terrified me, probably because he never behaved like ... doctor.

### **Употребление артиклей при наличии определения**

Когда существительное имеет при себе определение, выделяющее лицо или предмет из всех лиц или предметов данного класса, оно употребляется с определенным артиклем:

*The water inside the pipe does not meet the pressure of the air.*

Когда определение выражено определительным придаточным предложением, причастным оборотом или предложным оборотом, то:

- при наличии *ограничивающего определения* существительное употребляется с определенным артиклем:

*He knocked at the door of a very neat house.*

*Show me the telegram which was received yesterday.*

*This is the book you asked for.*

- при наличии *классифицирующего определения* существительное в единственном числе употребляется с неопределенным артиклем, а во множественном числе - без артикля:

*A letter which is written in pencil is difficult to read.*

*Vessels built for the transportation of oil are called tankers.*

- *описательное определение* не влияет на выбор артикля, и существительное употребляется с определенным или неопределенным артиклем или с местоимениями *some, any* на основании общих правил:

*I went to **the door where they were waiting for us.***

*Last summer I spent in a small village, **which I thought to be a nice place to live in.***

В сочетании "существительное + of + существительное" употребление артиклей зависит от того, говорится ли о знакомом предмете или лице, или об определенных по ситуации предметах или лицах. Сравните:

<i>a book of a student</i>	(одна из книг какого-то студента)
<i>the books of a student</i>	(эти книги какого-то студента)
<i>a book of the student</i>	(одна из книг знакомого студента)
<i>the books of the student</i>	(эти книги знакомого студента)
<i>the book of the student</i>	(эта книга знакомого студента)
<i>the books of students</i>	(эти книги каких-то студентов)

**Упр. 12.** Переведите следующие словосочетания на английский язык, а) работа какого-то автора; знание какого-либо предмета; статьи какого-либо ученого; эти данные авторов; студенты какого-либо университета; человек науки; учитель математики.

б) горы Крыма; металлы Урала; электростанции на Ангаре; леса Сибири; многие зоны (area) нашей планеты.

в) история искусства; прогресс науки; важность образования; формы растительной жизни (vegetable life); интерес к (for) экологии; население планеты.

г) вагоны поезда; средства транспорта; цель (purpose) визита; служащие (clerk) гостиницы.

**Упр. 13.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. ... chair on which you are sitting is not comfortable. 2. There is ... man waiting to see Mr Smith. 3. ... man whom Mr Smith telephoned this morning is here now. 4. I should like to find ... good book to read tonight. 5. ... book which I am reading now is a very good one. 6. ... book which gave me ... greatest pleasure was "War and Peace". 7. Have you got ... ciga-

rette? 8. John threw away ... cigarette he was smoking. 9. Peter put ... letter he had just received into his pocket. 10. I must write ... letter.

**Упр. 14.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. Number ... hundred and two, ... house next door to us, is for sale. It's quite ... nice house with ... big rooms. ... back windows look out on ... park. 2. Professor Jones, ... man who discovered ... new drug that everyone is talking about, refused to give ... press conference. 3. Peter Piper, ... student in ... professor's college, asked him why he refused to talk to ... press. 4. ... ship you were speaking about has just come onto ... port. She has been at ... sea for ... long time. Look: ... captain has just come on ... deck.

**Упр. 15.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. Everyone in our country knows Lomonosov, ... founder of ... first Russian university. 2. Nekrasov, ... famous Russian poet, described ... life of ... Russian peasants. 3. I don't want to miss ... concert which will take place at ... Philharmonic on ... 15th of ... April. 4. He graduated from ... University of ... London six years ago. Now he is ... scientist. And though he is ... young scientist, his name is well known. 5. My aunt is ... teacher of ... physics. 6. Yesterday I read ... book by Dickens, ... famous English writer. 7. I am sorry, I don't know ... way to ... nearest cafe. I am ... stranger here myself. 8. ... town I was born in is on ... Volga. 9. Who is «. author of this book? 10. ... quarter of ... hour was left before ... beginning of ... concert. We entered ... hall and saw ... group of ... pupils of our school. We joined them.

### **Употребление артикля с неисчисляемыми существительными**

**а)** Употребление артикля и местоимений *some* и *any* с именами существительными вещественными.

Имена существительные вещественные употребляются:

- без артикля, когда речь идет о веществе в общем смысле:

*We can't live without **water**.*

***Gas** is cheaper than **electricity**.*

и когда одно вещество противопоставляется другому:

*Which do you prefer; **tea** or **coffee**?*

~ с местоимениями **some** и **any**, когда речь идет о каком-то неопределенном количестве вещества:

*Bring me **some** water.*

*Isn't there **any** sugar in the sugar basin?*

- с определенным артиклем, когда речь идет об определенном количестве вещества, когда имеется определение, выделяющее определенное количество вещества, или из ситуации ясно, о каком именно количестве идет речь:

*I forgot to pay the bill, and now **the** gas has been cut off.*

***The** milk I bought yesterday has turned sour.*

***The** ore discovered by the expedition is of a high quality.*

- с неопределенным артиклем, когда имеется в виду порция вещества:

*Could you give me **a** coffee and a sandwich?*

Употребление артикля при наличии *классифицирующего* и *описательного определений*, а также *прилагательного в превосходной степени* не отличается от его употребления с нарицательными существительными:

***Silk** which is used for the aviation industry must be of the highest quality.*

*Bulgaria exports **tobacco**, which is one of the stable agricultural products of the country.*

*This is **the best** wine I have ever drunk.*

**Упр. 16.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

Once there lived ... man who was very fond of ... gold. He used to say, "While I have my gold, I am ... happiest man in ... world." And so all his life he saved ... money. One day he was travelling in ... desert of ... North Africa. He lost his way. He had no ... food or ... water. He was almost dying of ... hunger. He was so weak that he could not walk, he could only crawl. ... heat was terrible. There were only ... stones and ... sand around. Just then he saw ... bag lying on ... sand. He hoped that he would find ...

food in it and.... water, too. He crawled up to ... bag and opened it. He saw that ... bag was full of ... gold. What is ... use of ... gold to ... hungry man in ... desert? He left... bag on ... hot sand, crying bitterly, "I am ... most unhappy man in ... world."

**Упр. 17.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. Bill Robins was ... very rich man. He was ... richest man in ... village. 2. Pete is ... tallest boy in our class. Nick is ... shortest boy, but he is very ... strong. He is ... stronger than many boys who are ... taller than he. I think Nick is ... strongest boy in ... class. 3. Granny often tells us ... long stories. Today her story was still ... longer. It was ... longest story. She began telling it after ... dinner and finished only before ... supper. But ... story was very interesting. I think it was ... most interesting of Granny's stories. 4. Which was ... most difficult exercise in ... paper? 5. Which is ... best season of the year? 6. February is ... shortest month of the year. 7. Do you know ... longest river in our country? 8. In ... May ... days are ... longer than in ... April. 9. He is ... most intelligent person I know.

**b)** Употребление артикля и местоимений *some* и *any* с именами существительными отвлеченными.

Артикль не употребляется перед названиями научных дисциплин, видов спорта, искусств и языков (если после названия языка не стоит слово *language*). В противном случае употребляется определенный артикль:

*Chinese is difficult.*

*The Chinese language is difficult.*

*J.Bonner earned a BA in **Chemistry** and **Mathematics** from the University of Utah. Do you play **chess**?*

**Упр. 18.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. ... English is ... world language. 2. I study ... English; I attend ... English classes in ... evening. On ... days when I have no ... classes, I stay at ... home and do some work about ... house. I have ... dinner with my ... family. After ... dinner I watch ... TV and read ... books, ... newspapers and ...

magazines. I go to ... bed late at ... night. 3. I am thirsty. Give me ... water, please. 4. He is ... wonderful ... teacher. He teaches ... English. 5. His ... son is planning to get ... degree in ... computer science.

Имена существительные отвлеченные употребляются:

- без артикля, когда они выражают отвлеченные понятия в общем смысле: *While there is **life** there is **hope**.*

***Knowledge is power.***

- с определенным артиклем, когда они имеют при себе определение, относящее это понятие к какому-либо лицу или предмету:

*He was **the hope** of his parents.*

*I like **the music** of this ballet.*

- с местоимениями **some** и **any**, когда речь идет о неопределенной степени качества:

*There is **some difference** between these two samples.*

*He did not show **any fear**.*

- с неопределенным артиклем, когда речь идет о разновидности качества или чувства:

*He has **a cleverness** quite of his own.*

*He showed **a patience** that I had never expected of him.*

- с неопределенным артиклем, когда имеются существительные **period, population, distance, height, salary** и др. с последующим предлогом “*of + числительное + существительное*”:

*He has been working here for a period of 2 years.*

**Упр. 19.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. ... thermometer is ... instrument for measuring ... temperatures. 2. ... temperature today is not so high as it was yesterday. 3. ... observation and ... experience are two great teachers. 4. ... air is necessary for ... life. 5. ... length, ... breadth and ... height of ... cube are equal. 6. Every machine requires some sort of ... power to operate it. 7. ... history is his subject. Especially ... history of ... Middle Ages. 8. He finished his work without ... difficulty. 9. ... task presented ... difficulty, which we could not overcome at first. 10. He was not discouraged by ... difficulty of ... task.

с) Отсутствие артикля перед именами существительными нарицательными – исчисляемыми и неисчисляемыми.

Артикль отсутствует:

- перед существительным, имеющим при себе другой определитель:

*My room is large.*

*This book is interesting.*

- перед исчисляемыми существительными во множественном числе, когда в единственном числе следовало бы употребить неопределенный артикль:

*This **plant** is engaged in the manufacture of pumps.*

*They are hard working **students**.*

***Squares** have four sides.*

*These are such interesting **books**!*

Следует также помнить, что многие существительные имеют как отвлеченное, так и конкретное вещественное значение:

<i>medicine</i>	медицина	<i>a medicine</i>	лекарство
<i>glass</i>	стекло	<i>a glass</i>	стакан
<i>radio</i>	радиовещание	<i>a radio</i>	радиоприемник
<i>painting</i>	живопись	<i>a painting</i>	картина
<i>opera</i>	оперное искусство	<i>an opera</i>	опера
<i>tin</i>	олово, жесть	<i>a tin</i>	консервная банка

**Упр. 20.** Укажите правильные варианты употребления артикля *the*.

1. "Where's *coffee/ the coffee*?" - "It's in the cupboard". 2. *Tennis/ The tennis* is a very popular sport. 3. We went for a swim in the river. *Water/ The water* was very cold. 4. I don't like swimming in *cold water/ the cold water*. 5. You must visit the art gallery. *Paintings/ The paintings* are very beautiful. 6. *Money/ The money* does not always bring *happiness/ the happiness*. 7. *English/ The English* is the language of international business. 8. *Women/ The women* are often better teachers than *men/ the men*. 9. In Brit-



ain *coffee/the coffee* is more expensive than *tea /the tea*. 10. We had a very nice meal in that restaurant. *Cheese/ The cheese* was especially good. 11. *Most people/ The most people* still believe that *marriage/ the marriage* and *family life/ the family life* are the basis of our society. 12. They got married but *marriage/ the marriage* wasn't successful. 13. I know someone who wrote a book about *life/ the life* of Gandhi. 14. *Life/ the life* would be very difficult without *electricity/ the electricity*. 15. Do you know *people/ the people* who live next door? 16. Are you interested in *art/ the art* or *architecture/ the architecture*? 17. Two of the biggest problems facing our society are *crime/ the crime* and *unemployment/ the unemployment*. 18. I hate *violence/ the violence*.

- Употребление артикля перед словами типа ***university, school, hospital, church, prison*** и т.д. подразумевает, что говорящий имеет в виду здание. Употребление этих же существительных без артикля означает, что они рассматриваются как учреждения в общем смысле. Обратите внимание на разницу в употреблении артиклей в следующих парах предложений:

*My daughter is at **school**.*

*The meeting will be held at **the school**.*

*He was rushed to **hospital** immediately.*

*I'm going to **the hospital** to visit him.*

**Упр. 21.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. Our children attend ... very good school. 2. Some people think they know about education just because they were once at ... school. 3. People who spend time in ... prison rapidly become institutionalized. 4. As soon as the riot broke out, police surrounded ... prison. 5. A lot of people think ... prison should be just like any other building. 6. The trial attracted a lot of attention, and ... court was crowded. 7. A lot of people have been taken to ... court for failing to pay local taxes. 8. Though it's a small town, it has ... school, ... church and ... court. 9. ... youngest brother is at ... school now. 10. She is at ... school. If you go to ... school by ... tram, you will be

just in ... time to meet her.

**Упр. 22.** Укажите правильный вариант в каждом предложении.

1. I've got some cigarettes but I haven't got *light/ a light*. 2. *Light/ the light* travels faster *than sound/ the sound*. 3. We're having *lamb/ the lamb* for lunch. 4. The sheep gave birth to *lamb/a lamb* in the middle of the night. 5. "Would you like *cake/ a cake*?" "No, thanks. I don't like *cake/ a cake*". 6. This suit is made of *very fine cloth/ the very fine cloth*. 7. Can you get *cloth/ a cloth*, please? I've just spilt *tea /a tea* on your carpet. 8. I went to *a talk /talk* on *Russian revolution /the Russian revolution* last night. It was very interesting. 9. There has been *a talk/ talk* of redundancies at the British Shipping Company. 10. *Service/ A service* in restaurants isn't as good as it used to be. 11. *The Health Service/ Health Service* is suffering from severe cutbacks. 12. *The Times/ Times* is one of Britain's oldest newspapers. 13. *Time/ The time* and *tide/ the tide* wait for no man. 14. I don't usually like *poetry/ the poetry*. 15. But here's *a poem/ poem* I do like. 16. Do you want *an ice/ ice* in your whisky? 17. *Ice/ The ice* at the North and South Poles is said to be melting little by little.

**Упр. 23.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо. Какие неисчисляемые существительные можно использовать в словосочетании ***a piece of...***?

1. Can I offer you ... advice?  
... suggestion?
2. I've just heard ... interesting news.  
... interesting announcement.  
... interesting information.
3. There's going to be ... thunderstorm.  
... bad weather.
4. She is carrying ... luggage.  
... suitcase.
5. We'll need ... accommodation.  
... room for the night.
6. He's got ... strange equipment.  
... strange machine in his laboratory.

7. Do you mind if I put on ... music?  
... tape?

**Упр. 24.** Объясните случаи употребления артиклей или их отсутствие.

1. Is there *life* after *death*? 2. She has lived *a life* of *misery* since *the death* of her husband. 3. There's *a feeling* of *love, joy, beauty* and *peace*. 4. My new car's *a beauty*. It's *a real joy* to drive it. 5. That numerous *people* have had Near Death Experiences is not in *doubt*. 6. There is still *a doubt* in my mind about whether it was *the right thing* to do. 7. *The future* looks bleak – *drought, disease* and *economic collapse*. 8. *The drought* in *Africa* last year cost many *lives*. 9. There is *a drought* every year.

#### **Употребление артикля перед числительными.**

**a)** Как правило, когда определение выражено количественным числительным, существительное употребляется без артикля:

*Two men entered the room.*

Если же перед количественным числительным употребляется артикль, то он приобретает смысловое значение: ***the two*** – *эти два* или *оба* – и часто обозначает полное количество объектов:

*The close agreement of **the six compounds** is unlikely to be a coincidence.*

**b)** Перед порядковым числительным обычно употребляется определенный артикль.

Однако, когда порядковое числительное имеет значение *другой, еще один* или неизвестно общее число предметов, действий и пр., употребляется неопределенный артикль:

*A **third man** (еще один) entered the room.*

*The same authors put forward **a second correlation**.*

**c)** Артикль не употребляется перед существительным, если за ним следует номер (= количественное числительное); в этом случае существительное обычно пишется с заглавной буквы:

*I'm waiting for **Tram 55**.*

*The deduction of the equation you 'll find in **Chapter 8** of the book.*

**Упр. 25.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. Of all those to whom he appealed ... one was actually not in ... position to do anything for him; another was afraid; ... third was calculating eagerly to drive ... hard bargain; ... forth was too deliberate, anxious to have much time. 2. Two people would have to hold ... chair, and ... third would help him up on it, and ... forth would hand him ... nail, and ... fifth would pass him up ... hammer. 3. ... professor Earle Fox ignored for ... second time ... buzzing signal from ... secretary in ... adjoining office. 4. Mr Pickwick was perfectly aware that ... tree is ... very dangerous neighbour in ... thunderstorm. He had ... tree on his right, ... tree on his left, ... third before him, and ... fourth behind. 5. Our apartment is on ... third floor. 6. You are ... forth visitor asking where ... Room 40 is there.

### **Переход прилагательных и причастий в существительные**

Когда прилагательные употребляются с определённым артиклем, они выступают в роли *коллективных существительных*, которые относятся к данной группе людей (субстантивированные прилагательные):

***the wounded** – раненые*

***the rich** – богатые*

***the homeless** – бездомные*

Если прилагательное стоит перед существительным ***people***, артикль не употребляется. Сравните:

***The wounded** were taken to the hospital;*

***но: Wounded people** were taken to th hospital.*

***The French** are famous for their food;*

***но: French people** are famous for their food.*

**Упр. 26.** Закончите предложения, используя ***the*** со следующими прилагательными:

***rich    sick    blind    poor    injured    unemployed    dead***

1. Braille is a system of reading and writing by touch for ... . 2. Many people were killed in the plane crash. The bodies of ... were taken away, ... were taken to hospital. 3. Every English child knows the story of Robin Hood. It is said that he robbed ... and gave the money to ... . 4. Those people with jobs have enough money but life is not so easy for ... . 5. Agnes has been a nurse all her life. She has spent her life caring for ... .

**Упр. 27.** Как вы назовете людей из этих стран?

<b>страна</b>	<b>один человек</b>	<b>народ в целом</b>
Canada	a Canadian	the Canadians
Germany		
Switzerland		
Russia		
China		
Brazil		
England		

### **Употребление артикля**

#### **с именами существительными собственными**

Как правило, имена собственные употребляются без артикля, а также в том случае, если они стоят с существительными, обозначающими звание или титулы:

**Queen Anne**

**King Lear**

**Professor Higgins**

**General Washington**

Артикль не употребляется с существительными, стоящими после глаголов *to appoint, to elect, to make, to crown, to become*:

*They appointed him **secretary** of the new Committee.*

*He was elected **chairman**.*

*They made him **President**.*

*They crowned him **king**.*

**Упр. 28.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

James Gordon Brown was ... Prime Minister of ... United Kingdom and Leader of ... Labour Party. Brown became ... Prime Minister in ... June 2007, after ... Blair's resignation. Immediately before this he had served as ... Chancellor of ... Exchequer in ... Labour government from 1997 to 2007.

Brown has ... PhD in ... history from ... University of ... Edinburgh and spent his ... early career working as ... television journalist. He has been ... Member of ... Parliament since 1983. As ... Prime Minister, he also held ... offices of First Lord of ... Treasury and ... Minister for ... Civil Service.

After ... initial rise in ... opinion polls, Browns time as ... Prime Minister saw his ... approval ratings fall and ... Labour Party suffered its ... worst local election results in 40 years. On 11 May 2010, Brown officially resigned as ... Prime Minister and leader of ... Labour Party. He was succeeded as ... Prime Minister by David Cameron. At ... age of 43, Cameron became ... youngest. British Prime Minister and Leader of ... Conservative Party.

Артикль не употребляется с названиями улиц, дорог, площадей, городов, стран, состоящих из одного слова, континентов, озер, единичных островов и горных вершин, с названиями журналов: ***Oxford Street, Red Square, London, Russia*** (но: *the Russian Federation*), ***America, Lake Baikal*** (но: *the Baikal*), ***Madagascar, Ben Nevis, People*** (magazine).

Определенный артикль употребляется перед ними в следующих случаях:

- перед фамилиями во множественном числе:

***The Browns have left London.***

- если перед названием страны присутствует существительное с предшествующим определением или имеются слова: республика, королевство, союз и пр.: ***the British Empire, the United Kingdom;***

- перед названиями океанов, морей, рек, заливов: ***the Pacific Ocean, the Persian Gulf, the Volga;***

перед названиями озер: *The Ontario*; однако если перед названием стоит слово *Lake*, артикль не употребляется: *Lake Ontario*;

- в названиях горных хребтов: *the Alps*;

- перед названиями групп островов: *the Bermudas*;

- перед названиями судов, газет: *the "Titanic"*, *"The Dally Mirror"*;

- перед названиями гостиниц, музеев, галерей, театров, кинотеатров: *the "Savoy"*, *the Palace Theatre*, *the Odeon*, *the British Museum*, *the Tate Gallery*;

- перед названиями с *of*: *the Bank of England*, *the University of Salamanca*;

- перед названием исторических документов: *the Constitution*, *the Magna Carta*;

- перед названием следующих городов, стран, улиц, местностей: *the Hague (Гаага)*, *the Netherlands*, *the Ukraine*, *the Crimea*, *the Caucasus*, *the Transvaal*, *the Congo*, *the Argentine*, *the West Indies*, *the Riviera*, *the Lebanon*, *the High Street*, *the Mall*, *the Strand* и др.

- Если в названиях есть имя или фамилия человека или название места, то артикль не употребляется: *Buckingham Palace*, *Lloyds Bank*, *Cambridge University*, *Westminster Abbey*.

**Упр. 29.** Поставьте артикли, где необходимо.

1. ... Statue of Liberty was a gift of friendship from ... France to ... United States. 2. No one in ... Spanish class knew ... correct answer to ... Mrs Perez's question. 3. ... Lake Erie is one of ... five Great Lakes in ... North America. 4. On our trip to ... Spain, we crossed ... Atlantic Ocean. 5. While we were in ... Alaska, we saw ... Eskimo village. 6. ... David attended ... Princeton University. 7. ... Harry has been admitted to ... School of Medicine at ... Midwestern University. 8. ... Queen Elizabeth II is ... monarch of... United Kingdom. 9. ... Declaration of Independence was drawn up in 1776. 10. ... Florida State University is smaller than ... University of Florida. 11. ... Heathrow is ... busiest airport in ... Europe. 12. We arrived in ... Paris on ... third of August.

**Упр. 30.** Поставъте артикли, где необходимо.

1. ... Elbrus is ... highest peak of ... Caucasus. 2. ... Japan is situated on ... islands. 3.... London is on ... Thames. 4.... Poland is to ... west of... Russia. 5.... USA is in ... North America. 6. In ... north of our country ... summer is very short. 7. What is ... capital of... Spain? 8. This expedition has just returned from ... Antarctic. 9.... Urals separate Europe from ... Asia. 10.... Ireland is ... island, isn't it? 11. ... Mississippi is... longest river in ... world. 12.... names of... rivers, seas and oceans are used with ... definite article. 13. Turning to ... East he saw that... sun had risen, 14. I hear he is off to ... Central Africa. 15. ... Severn is ... longest river in ... Great Britain. 16.... Great Britain lies in ... eastern part of... Atlantic Ocean.

**Упр. 31.** Поставъте артикль, где необходимо.

1. ... Moscow is situated on ... Moscow River. ... Moscow is a river that moves very slowly. There is ... canal called ... Moscow-Volga Canal which joins ... Moscow to ... Volga. ... Volga runs into ... Caspian Sea. 2. Several rivers run into ... sea at... New York. ... most important is ... Hudson River which empties into ... Atlantic Ocean. Besides ... Hudson there are ... two other rivers: ... East River and ... Harlem River. 3. In ... Siberia there are many long rivers: ... Ob, ... Irtysh, ... Yenissei, ... Lena and ... Amur. 4. ... Altai Mountains are ... higher than ... Urals. 5. There is ... splendid ... view of ... Lake Geneva from this hotel. 6. My ... friends have travelled a lot. This ... year they are going to fly to ... Canary Islands. 7. Which river flows through ... London? — ... Thames. 8. Of which country is ... Washington ... capital? — ... United States. 9. ... United Kingdom consists of ... Great Britain and ... Northern Ireland. 10. ... Chicago is on ... Lake Michigan.

**Упр. 32.** Поставъте артикль, где необходимо.

... Veliky Novgorod is ... most important city of ... North-Western Russia and ... administrative centre of ... Novgorod Oblast. ... city lies along ... Volkhov River just below its ... outflow from ... Lake Ilmen.

... Novgorod was ... second main city after ... Kiev in ... Russia in the mid centuries. It was ... rich and powerful city, and ... State of Novgorod



was as large as ... present Sweden. Its ... power was based on ... international trade. ... Novgorod was ... main Russian port for many centuries and was important for ... Baltic Sea trade.

Nowadays ... Veliky Novgorod is ...small, calm town in the provinces, with ... splendid old Russian architecture, ... interesting museums, ... fresh air, many trees, and ... nice and helpful people. I like this ... town very much. I like ... people there.

In 2009, ... Novgorod marked 1150 ... years since it was first mentioned in 859 in ... most ancient national texts – ... *Russian Primary Chronicles* (= «*Повести временных лет*»). ... event was granted ... national status and was organized with ... participation of ... Russian President and ... Federal Government. ... celebration lasted for ... whole week. ... programme was filled with ... performances, ... exhibitions, and ... fairs. ... fireworks and laser show brought... huge crowds to ... Volkhov River on ... Saturday and ... Sunday nights. ... skydivers and ... show by vintage planes graced ... skies over ... river area on ... Sunday. Many of these events were covered by ... news media and shown on ... TV.

**Упр. 33.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. ... Neva flows into ... Gulf of ... Finland. 2. ... Pacific Ocean is very deep. 3. ... Urals are not very high. 4. ... Elbrus is ... highest peak of ... Caucasus; but it's ... highest mountain in ... Europe too. 5. ... Alps are covered with ... snow. 6. ... Shetland Islands are situated to ... north "of ... Great Britain. 7. Is ... Canada ... largest country in ... America? 8.... Crimea is washed by ... Black Sea. 9. ... Lake Baikal is ... deepest lake in ... world. 10. Is ... Paris ... capital of ... France? 11.Lomonosov was born in ... small village on ... shore of ... White Sea. 12. Gogol was born in ... Ukraine in 1809. 13.... Caucasus separates ... Black Sea from ... Caspian Sea. 14. ... Europe and ... America are separated by ... Atlantic Ocean. 15.... Baltic Sea is stormy in winter. 16. There are many small islands in ... Pacific Ocean. 17. ... North Sea separates ... British Isles from ... Europe. 18. ... Balkans are old mountains. 19. ... Nile flows across ... northeastern part of ... Africa to ... Mediterranean Sea. 20. Which are ... highest mountains in ... Russia? 21. When was she in... USA? 22. When was he in ... Ethiopia?

**Упр. 34.** Поставьте *the*, где необходимо.

1. ... Kevin lives in ... Coronation Street. 2. Have you ever been to ... National Theatre and ... British Museum? 3. ... Milan is a large city in ... north of ... Italy.

4. Have you ever been to ... Hague ? 5. ... Brussels is the capital of ... Belgium. 6. ... Manila is the capital of ... Philippines. 7. There are two cinemas in our town - ... Regan and ... Plasa. 8. ... Dr Bradbury comes from a small village in ... west of ... Ireland. 9. ... Rocky Mountains are in ... North America. 10. ... Texas is famous for oil and cowboys. 11. "Where are you staying?" "At ... Intercontinental Hotel". 12. ... National Gallery is in ... Trafalgar Square in ... London. 13. In ... London ... Houses of Parliament are beside ... River Thames. 14. ... Panama canal joins ... Atlantic Ocean and ... Pacific Ocean. 15. If you sail from ... Britain to ... Denmark you cross ... North Sea.

**Упр. 35.** Поставьте артикли, где необходимо.

1. ... King Juan Carlos of ... Spain arrived in ... London today for ... three day visit to ... United Kingdom. He was met by ... Queen and drove with her to ... Buckingham Palace. Tomorrow he will have lunch with ... Governor of ... Bank of England and in the evening he will have talks with businessmen. 2. On the first morning we went to ... British Museum and had lunch at ... MacDonald's in ... Church Street. We looked in ... *Evening Standard* newspaper and found there was a good film at ... Odeon (cinema) near ... Piccadilly Circus.

### **Употребление артиклей с некоторыми устойчивыми выражениями**

Ниже приводится список некоторых устойчивых выражений, которые употребляются

- с неопределенным артиклем:

- (выражения, обозначающие количество): *a lot of, a great deal of, a good deal of, a great number of, a good many, a great many; a few, a little;*

- (выражения с предлогами): *all of a sudden, at a time when, at a*

*time, for a short /long time, in a loud voice, on a large/ small/ semi-industrial scale, as a result of, as a matter of fact;*

• (глагольные словосочетания): *to be a success/ in a hurry; it is a pity/ shame; it is a pleasure, to have a mind/ a cold/ a good time/ a look/ a headache; to take a seat; to go for a walk; to make a living, to put an end to, to come to an end* и др.

- с определенным артиклем: *in the morning (evening, afternoon), the day before yesterday, the other day, at the beginning, at the end, in the country, in the distance, on the one (other) hand, on the whole, to play the piano (the violin), to tell the truth, to run the risk, to listen to the radio,*

но: *to watch TV; it is out of the question* и др.

- без артикля:

*at home, at hand, at work, at night, at first sight, from time to time, from head to foot, from morning till evening by tram (train, bus, air-land), on foot, by heart, by chance, by means of, by mistake, by name, in/on time, on sale, on credit, to keep house, to make use of, to take notice on* и др.

Обратите внимание на употребление артикля со словами:

***another*** - другой (неопределенный), какой-то другой, еще один;

***other*** - другой (во множественном числе или перед неисчисляемым существительным);

***the other*** - другой (определенный), тот другой, другой из двух.

**Упр. 36.** Заполните пропуски выражениями *a lot of, plenty of, a real deal of*.

*Note.* In spoken English much and many are usually replaced by these expressions in simple affirmative sentences. Remember that ***a great deal of*** can be used to replace ***much only***.

*Пример:* We have *a lot of (plenty of)* apples this year.

We have *a lot of (plenty of, a great deal of)* time.

1. They've got ... cassette-recorders in the laboratory. 2. Doctor Sandford's wife has ... flowers in her garden. 3. She has ... trouble with her boy Benny. 4. The doctor has... patients. 5. A housewife has ... work to do. 6. He has got ... English books in his library. 7. We have got ... spare time today. 8. Their family is large. They have ... children. 9. I spend ... money on books. 10. She buys ... milk for her grandchildren. 11. I have ... questions to ask. 12. He knows ... interesting stories.

**Упр. 37.** Заполните пропуски *some, any, not any, much, many, not much, not many, very little, a little, very few, a few*.

1. Are there ... college-graduates among your friends? - Yes, there are.... 2. Are there... students in the next classroom? -No. there aren't.... 3. I haven't got time. I must hurry. 4. I have ... time and can help you. 5. There are ... cups on the table, but there aren't glasses. 6. I have very ... time and can't stay any longer. 7. We know very... about it. 8. I have... questions to ask. 9. Very... people know Doctor Sandford. 10. There are... girls in the family, are there ? II. There' s very... chalk at the blackboard, go and fetch ... . 12. There are ... students in the hall, are there? 13. There isn't... tea in the tea-pot. 14. There isn't... paper in the box. I need more. 15. There aren't ... pencils in the box. don't take .... 16. It's a secret. Very... people know about it. 17. Please, add ... more tea in my cup.

**Упр. 38.** Поставъте артикли, где необходимо.

**A.** 1. I don't usually like staying at ... hotels, but last summer we spent a few days at ... very nice hotel by ... sea. 2. ... tennis is my favourite sport. I play once or twice ... week if I can, but I'm not ... very good player. 3. I won't be home for ... dinner this evening. I'm meeting some friends after ... work and we're going to ... cinema. 4. ... unemployment is very high at the moment and it's very difficult for ... people to find ... work. 5. There was ... accident as I was going ... home last night. Two people were taken to ... hospital. I think ... most accidents are caused by ... people driving too fast. 6. Carol is ... economist. She used to work in ... investment department of ... Lloyds Bank. Now she works for ... American bank in ... United States. 7. "What's ... name of ... hotel where you're staying?"

“... Imperial. It's in ... Queen Street in ... city centre. It's near ... station.”

8. I have ... two brothers. ... older one is training to be ... pilot with ... British Airways. ... younger one is still at ... school. When he leaves ... school, he hopes to go to ... university to study ... law.

**B.** 1. Excuse me. Is there ... post office near here? 2. ... We haven't got any money. It's all right. I'm going to ... bank. 3. My wife and I went out for ... meal last night. ... food was excellent. I don't usually like ... Chinese food, but ... duck was superb. 4. Has ... postman been yet? I'm expecting ... parcel. 5. We've moved to ... lovely house in ... country. It's got ... views of fields and hills, and there's ... garden at ... back. 6. ... government without ... strong leader will not produce ... good policies. 7. ... government has introduced ... law to ban ... sale of ... air guns to ... people under ... age of eighteen.

**C.** 1. In my job, I do ... business with people from all over the world. 2. I'm going to do ... shopping. Do you want anything? 3. I was late for ... work this morning. 4. Can you keep ... secret? I'm getting married. 5. He got ... sack because he was caught stealing money. 6. It isn't easy, but I think we're making ... progress. 7. I lost ... control of the car and crashed into a wall. 8. Make ... love, not ... war. 9. If you make ... promise, you must keep it. 10. When buying a house, you should take into ... consideration how near it is to public transport. 11. He set ... fire to his factory so that he could claim the insurance. 12. You must make ... effort to get to know your neighbours. 13. I've been to all the countries of ... Europe with ... exception of ... Albania. 14. If you're in Paris, take ... opportunity to visit the Louvre.

**Упр. 39.** Поставете артикли или местоимение *some*, где необходимо.

1. ... book on that shelf is ... interesting one about ... history. 2. It is pleasant to play ... game of ... tennis on ... summer afternoon. 3. ... butcher opposite ... library always sells ... good meat. 4. ... honesty is ... best of all ... virtues. 5. Peter travelled in ... third-class carriage with ... Americans. 6. When ... *Titanic* was crossing ... Atlantic, she struck ... iceberg which tore ... huge hole in her bow. ... captain ordered ... crew to help ... passengers into ... boats. 7. Everywhere ... man has cut down ...

forests in order to cultivate ... ground or to use ... wood as ... fuel or as ... building material. But ... interference with ... nature often brings ... disaster: ... tree-felling sometimes turns ... fertile land into a dustbowl. 8. ... people think that ... lead is ... heaviest metal, but ... gold is heavier. 9. We have a very good train service from here to ... city centre, and most people go to ... work by train. You can go by ... bus too, of course, but you can't get a season ticket on ... bus. 10. "I'd like to see ... Mr Smith please." "Do you mean ... Mr Smith who works in ... box office or ... other Mr Smith?"

**Упр. 40.** Поставьте артикль, где необходимо.

1. ... of my friends advised me to take ... taxi; another said that there was quite... good bus service. 2."... friend of mine lent me ... book by Meredith. I've only ... more chapter to read. Would you like ... loan of it afterwards?" "No, thanks. I read one of his books ... few years ago and didn't like it. Besides I have ... library book to finish. If I don't take it back tomorrow I'll have to pay ... fine. 3. Most people like ... rest after ... hard day's work, but Tom seems to have ... inexhaustible supply of energy. 4. I've told you ... hundred times not to come into ... room with ... hat on. 5. You've been ... great help to me; ... day I will repay you. 6. My car broke down near ... bus stop. There was ... man waiting for ... bus so I asked him for ... advice. He took ... quick look at my car and said, "Buy ... new one." 8. ... day a new director arrived, the staff took ... instant dislike to him. He was ... ambitious, bad-tempered man

**Упр. 41.** Исправьте ошибки, связанные с артиклями. Помните, что перед названиями частей тела употребляется соответствующее притяжательное местоимение.

1. Jane, has anyone ever told you that you've got some lovely fingers? 2. I'm very interested in the history, especially the history of Western Europe. 3. What a lovely weather we're having! It's such a nice day! 4. Did you remember to buy a bread while you were out at some shops? 5. Crossing the English Channel can be quite unpleasant in the bad weather. 6. People who live on the floor above ours work in a government ministry. 7. What's

the government going to do about the unemployment?

**Упр. 42.** В 10 предложениях артикль *the* употреблен правильно, а в 10 - неправильно. Найдите неправильные предложения и исправьте их.

1. He lived in United States for ten years. 2. John has cut the leg and needs the stitches. 3. The camera I bought yesterday doesn't work. 4. William Wordsworth is famous for his poems about nature. 5. It was first lime I had crossed equator. 6. This is only one left but you can have it. 7. Frank does a lot of work for the disabled. 8. I will be visiting the Netherlands next month. 9. Society doesn't care enough for old people. 10. This is the same film I saw last week. 11. The worst thing was not knowing exactly what had happened. 12. Harder we work, more money we make. 13. Smiths are coming round to dinner tonight. 14 .The aeroplane is one of the greatest inventions of the twentieth century. 15. It's very disappointing news but that's the life. 16. Eating the chocolate always gives me pimples on my face. 17. What is on radio this afternoon? 18. John plays the football very well. 19. The furniture was sold at auction. 20. He was sent to prison for life.

**Упр. 43.** Поставьте артикли в текстах, где необходимо.

**A.** ... Russia is such ... large country that when it is night in one part of ... country, it is day in another part, when it is winter in one part of ... country, it is already summer in another. Imagine it is ... beginning of ... May now. It is spring in ... St Petersburg. ... weather is fine. It is still cool at ... night, but it is quite warm in ... afternoon. It sometimes rains, but ... rain is warm, too. ... ground is covered with ... soft green grass, and ... trees are covered with ... green leaves. But while it is spring in St Petersburg, it is still winter in ... north of our country at... beginning of ... May. Here it is cold and sometimes frosty, ... rivers and ... seas are covered with ... ice. ... ice does not melt in some places even in summer. ... ground is covered with ... deep snow. In ... south of our country ... weather is quite different. It is already summer in ... Caucasus. It is much warmer than in St Petersburg. It is sometimes even hot. ... sky is usually cloudless and it seldom rains here. People wear ... summer clothes. They enjoy gardening. You

should see their ... gardens in ... summertime — they are beautiful.

\* \* \*

**B.** Barack Hussein Obama is ... 44th President of ... United States. He is ... first African American to hold ... office.

With ... father from ... Kenya and ... mother from ... Kansas, ... President Obama was born in ... Hawaii on August 4, 1961. He was raised with help from his ... grandfather, who served in ... army, and his ... grandmother, who worked her way up from ... typing pool to ... middle management at ... bank.

Obama is ... graduate of ... Columbia University and ... Harvard Law School, where he was ... president of the Harvard Law Review. He was ... community organizer in ... Chicago before earning his ... law degree. He worked as ... civil rights attorney in ... Chicago and taught ... constitutional law at ... University of ... Chicago Law School, from 1992 to 2004.

Obama served three ... terms in ... Illinois State Senate from 1997 to 2004. He cut ... taxes for ... working families, and expanded ... health care for ... children and their ... parents. He won election to ... United States Senate in November 2004.

Obama served as ... junior United States Senator from ... Illinois, from ... January 2005 until he resigned after his ... election to ... presidency in November 2008. He was elected ... 44th President of ... United States on ... November 4, 2008, and sworn in on ... January 20, 2009. Obama is also ... 2009 Nobel Peace Prize laureate. He and his wife, Michelle, are ... proud parents of two ... daughters, Malia and Sasha.

\* \* \*

**C.** For most of ... past two and ... half million years ... human beings left their garbage where it fell. Oh, they sometimes tidied up their sleeping and activity areas, but that was about all. This disposal scheme functioned adequately, because ... hunters and ... gatherers frequently abandoned their campgrounds to follow ... game or find new stands of plants. ... man faced his first garbage crisis when he become ... sedentary animal - when, rather than move himself, he chose to move his garbage.

\* \* \*

**D.** Swift, ... famous English writer, was travelling one day on ... horseback



with his servant. ... weather was bad, it was raining, and ... roads were muddy. In ... evening the two men came to ... inn. Before going to ... bed Swift told his servant to clean his boots. But ... servant was lazy and did not do it. In ... morning Swift asked ... servant why he had not cleaned ... boots. "What's ... use cleaning ... boots now?" said ... servant. "... roads are muddy, and ... boots will soon be dirty again." "All right," said ... writer. "Let's go. We must continue ... journey." "But I haven't had ... breakfast," said ... displeased servant. "Well, what's ... use giving you ... breakfast now?" said Swift. "You will soon be hungry again."

\* \* \*

E. ... train stopped at ... little station. ... passenger looked out of the window of ... train carriage and saw ... woman selling ... cakes. ... man had not had ... breakfast in ... morning. He was hungry and wanted to buy ... cake. ... woman was standing rather far from ... carriage. ... man did not want to go and buy ... cake himself because he was afraid to miss ... train. He saw ... boy who was walking along ... platform near ... carriage. He called ... boy and asked him, "How much does ... cake cost?" "Threepence, sir," answered ... boy. ... man gave him a sixpence and said, "Bring me ... cake, and with ... other threepence buy ... cake for yourself." ... boy took ... money and went to ... woman. A few minutes later ... boy returned. He was eating ... cake. He gave ... man threepence change and said, "... woman had only one cake, sir."

## **1.2. Единственное и множественное число существительных**

### **Категория числа. Образование множественного числа правильных существительных**

В английском языке существительные делятся на исчисляемые и неисчисляемые. Исчисляемые существительные имеют форму единственного и множественного числа. Неисчисляемые существительные не имеют формы множественного числа, никогда не употребляются с неопределенным артиклем, согласуются с глаголом в единственном числе и определяются количественными местоимениями *much* и *little*.

Множественное число большинства существительных образует-

ся путем добавления в конце слова окончания **-s**: *car - cars, book - books*; или **-es**, если существительное оканчивается на **-s, -sh, -ch, -x**: *class - classes, disk - dishes, match - matches, box - boxes*

Некоторые существительные, оканчивающиеся на **-o**, требуют добавления окончания **-es**: *tomato - tomatoes, potato - potatoes, hero - heroes*. Другие образуют множественное число по общим правилам: *photo - photos, piano - pianos*.

Если существительное оканчивается на букву **-y** с предшествующей согласной, то она заменяется на **-ies**: *baby - babies, family - families*.

Если букве **-y** предшествует гласная, то по общему правилу добавляется **-s**: *holiday - holidays, key - keys*. Это правило распространяется и на имена собственные: *Kennedy - the Kennedys*.

Во многих словах, оканчивающихся на **-f**, во множественном числе **-f** меняется на **-v+es**: *shelf - shelves, knife - knives*.

Однако слова **belief, chief, proof, roof** и некоторые другие образуют множественное число путем добавления в конце слова окончания **-s**.

**Упр. 44.** Напишите следующие существительные в форме множественного числа:

A boy, a lady, a day, a potato, a party, a watch, a glass, a city, a church, an address, a sandwich, a key, a video, a way, a wolf, a leaf, a half, a story, a knife, a dress, a lamp, a box, a brother, a brother-in-law, a dog, a bench, a hospital, a bed, a sentence, a toy, an exercise, a niece, a son-in-law, a family, a library, a wife, a tomato, a brush, a baby.

### **Множественное число неправильных существительных.**

#### **Особые случаи употребления существительных в единственном и множественном числе**

Некоторые существительные образуют множественное число путем изменения корневой гласной:

*foot - feet, goose - geese, tooth - teeth, mouse - mice, woman - women, man - men, gentleman - gentlemen, fireman - firemen,*

**но:** *German - Germans.*

С помощью суффикса **-en** множественное число образуют три слова: ***child - children, ox - oxen, brother - brethren*** (духовное братство).

Некоторые существительные имеют одинаковую форму во множественном и в единственном числе. Часть из них оканчивается на **-s**: ***species, series, means, headquarters, crossroads, gasworks***:

*That species is rare.      Those species are common.*

Другая часть никогда не оканчивается на **-s**: ***sheep, deer, fish*** (множественное число употребляют, когда говорят о разных видах рыб: *the fishes of the Mediterranean*):

*That deer is young.      Those deer are old.*

Собирательные существительные, к которым относятся такие слова, как ***class, team, police, committee, audience, family*** не меняют форму, если употребляются в значении множественного числа. В этом случае речь идет не о монолитной организации, а о ее членах. Индикатором числа в этом случае становится число сказуемого или местоимения:

*That class has its final test on Friday.*

*The class are working on their individual projects today.*

Собирательные существительные ***police*** и ***cattle*** всегда употребляются во множественном числе.

Некоторые названия предметов одежды: ***trousers, jeans, shorts, pyjamas, tights***, инструментов: ***scissors, tweezers*** согласуются с глаголом во множественном числе. Эти слова используются с глаголом в единственном числе в выражениях типа ***a pair of jeans***.

Если слова, выражающие понятие количества ***several, many, both, few, a few***, являются подлежащим, то они согласуются с глаголом во множественном числе:

*Only a few have passed the exam.*

Выражение ***a number of*** – *некоторое количество, (целый) ряд, множество* согласуется с глаголом во множественном числе, а ***the number of*** - *число, количество* требует глагола в единственном числе:

*There are a number of reasons to choose Hilda as a candidate.*

*The number of refugees from Syria continues to increase*

**Упр. 45.** Образуйте множественное число от следующих существительных:

a person, a mouse, foot, a fish, a child, a woman, a sheep, a sportsman, a man, a tooth, a watch, a postman, a day, a shelf, a sister-in-law, a text, a roof, a cassette-recorder, a page, a handkerchief, a lawn, a bush, a deer, a pantry, a sitting-room, a study, a sofa, an exercise, a housewife, a son-in-law, a nursery, a child, a woman, a family, a boy, a mouse, a penny, a face, a tomato, a mother-in-law, a toy, a sentence, a leaf, a piano, a policeman.

**Упр. 46.** Заполните пропуски в следующих предложениях формами глагола *is* или *are* в зависимости от числа подлежащего. Объясните свой выбор.

1. Several unusual species of birds ... found in this area. 2. When a young deer ... motionless, its colouring will hide it well. 3. The committee ... ready to make its recommendations public. 4. Both apparatus ... available for your use. 5. The family ... fighting among themselves constantly. 6. The fish in the aquarium ... waiting for their daily feeding. 7. All sheep ... dipped in the spring to kill the parasites. 8. The press ... requested to show their credentials to the guard.

### **Неисчисляемые существительные**

Неисчисляемые существительные могут быть нарицательными (*concrete*) и отвлеченными (*abstract*).

Нарицательные существительные: *meat, tea, butter, bread, juice, furniture, luggage, baggage*;

- названия различных материалов, металлов и веществ: *gold, silk, iron, oil, silk, cotton*;

- названия наук и видов спорта: *mathematics, physics, economics, statistics, ethics, gymnastics*

**но:** *These statistics are unreliable*. (Если речь идет не о науке в целом);

- название болезней: *measles, mumps, herpes*;

Отвлеченные существительные: *news, politics, weather, advice, accommodation, permission, behaviour, chaos, damage, news, knowledge, traffic, work, luck, research, progress, information*;

- некоторые имена собственные: *the United States, the United Nations, Brussels, Athens, Wales*;

- названия книг, газет, фильмов:

*The New York Times* is a good newspaper.

*Star Wars* was a good movie.

Выражения, обозначающие количество времени, веса, объема как одно целое, имея форму множественного числа, согласуются с глаголом в единственном числе:

*Two weeks is enough time for a nice vacation.*

*Five hundred rubles is required as an entrance fee.*

*Twenty gallons of gasoline costs a lot of money.*

**Упр. 47.** Найдите и исправьте ошибку в некоторых из следующих предложений.

1. News of the peace talks has not yet reached the island. 2. Politics usually attract ambitious individuals. 3. There were extra copies of *the New York Times* in all the offices. 4. Two weeks are ample time for a camping trip to the state park. 5. Two thousand dollars is a lot for him to pay for tutorial. 6. *Jaws*, a movie about sharks, was seen by a record number of people. 7. Both mathematics and physics are interesting. 8. Thermodynamics are beyond me.

**Упр. 48.** Распределите следующие существительные в две колонки:

а) исчисляемые, б) неисчисляемые. С какими из них можно употребить неопределенный артикль?

apple, literature, sugar, ball, music, sea, news, dress, tomato, soup, mountain, advice, friendship, foreigner, money, class, shop, poetry, corner, ice, artist, sentence, subject, mistake.

**Упр. 49.** Используйте *some* – некоторое количество, где необходимо.

Note. Uncountable nouns and countable nouns in the plural are preceded by *some* when "a certain quantity or number" is implied.

1. Students write on ... paper and also on the blackboard. 2. I need ... writing-paper to write a letter. 3. I like ... sweet apples, 4. Please, buy me ... apples. 5. ... children must drink ... milk every day. 6. ... children do not like ... milk. 7. The tea is very hot. I must put... milk in it 8. What must I buy – ... cheese or ... butter? 9. I am fond of... flowers. 10. Put... butter on the potatoes. 11. I've brought you ... flowers. 12. Give me ... bread. 13. I don't like ... tea at this time of the day. 14. I'd like ... hot tea now. 15. Bring ...water, please.

**Упр. 50.** Выделите исчисляемые существительные при помощи неопределенного артикля. Неисчисляемые существительные в общем смысле употребляются без артикля.

1. He is ... honesty itself. 2. ... iron is ... metal. 3. ... knife is made of ... metal. 4. I want ... glass of... milk. 5. I like ... jam on ... piece of... bread. 6. We can write ... letter in ... ink or with ... pencil. 7. I prefer ... book of... poetry to stories of... adventure. 8. Can you give me ... piece of... advice? 9. No news is ... good news. 10.... kindness is ... good quality.

**Упр. 51.** Сделайте все необходимые изменения, используя слова в скобках.

Пример: There aren't many jobs for school leavers (employment). – There *isn't much employment* for school leavers.

1. He couldn't give me much information (details). 2. When I moved into my flat, I had very few chairs or tables or anything (furniture). 3. There aren't many flats to rent in this town (accommodation). 4. I haven't got many bags. They're in the boot (luggage). 5. I had a little time to spare, so I browsed round a bookshop (minutes). 6. Very little research has been done to find out the cause (experiments). 7. It's very quiet in my area. There aren't many cars or lorries (traffic).

**Упр. 52.** Поставьте неопределенный артикль в следующих восклицательных предложениях, где необходимо:

1. What... difficult phoneme this is! 2. What... deep snow! 3. What ... easy sentences these are! 4. What ... warm water! 5. What ... cold evening! 6. What ... clever student she is! 7. What... good ideas you have! 8. What... beautiful music he is playing! 9. What ... dark eyes your daughter has! 10. What ... silly mistake you have made! 11. What ... fine weather! 12. What ... good advice! 13. What ... pretty girl! 14. What ... talented writer he is! 15. What... lovely child your boy is!

**Упр. 53.** Заполните пропуски в предложениях словами из предложенного списка. Каждое слово используется дважды в каждой паре предложений, один раз в форме единственного числа, а другой раз - в форме множественного числа. (Неисчисляемое существительное с окончанием *-s*, приобретает другое значение).

<i>quarter</i>	<i>condition</i>	<i>term</i>	<i>experience</i>	<i>youth</i>	<i>good</i>
<i>damage</i>	<i>pain</i>	<i>honour</i>	<i>ground</i>	<i>length</i>	<i>saving</i>

1. a) Under the ... of the contract, you are obliged to repay the loan within two years. b) The car was a reasonable price, but wasn't in good ... . 2. a) It has been an ... to work with you. I've been very proud of what we've achieved together. b) She has an ... degree in geography. 3. a) I have a terrible ... at the back of my neck. b) He took great ... to ensure his quests' stay was pleasant. 4. a) After the accident, it took her a long time to come to ... with the fact that she would never dance again. b) During his first ... of office, the Prime Minister made many sensible decisions. 5. a) We need a person with relevant ... to fill the post. b) He wrote a book about his ... whilst crossing Africa on foot. 6. a) The Vicar was a kind man, and did a lot of ... during his life. b) There is a wide range of electrical ... on sale in our village shop. 7. a) The day return fare is only \$ 12 – a ... of \$8 on the full fare. b) Mrs. Higgins's house was broken into the other day, and all her ... were taken. 8. a) Officers don't live with ordinary soldiers. Their ... are usually separate and more luxurious. b) Interest rates have risen to 8.25 per cent, a rise of a ... of a per cent. 9. a) For some reason, he was ashamed of his working class background, and went great ... to conceal the fact. b) I can only swim one ... of the swimming pool before I get

tired. 10. a) Don't sit on the grass. The ... is still very wet. b) I trust John. I have good ... for believing his version of events. 11. a) The storm caused a lot of .... b) She was awarded four thousand pounds' ... in the libel case. 12. a) Two ... were seen running away from the scene of the crime. 13. b) ... has always been the time for rebellion.

**Упр. 54.** Переведите на английский язык, обращая внимание на неисчисляемые существительные:

1. Спасибо за хороший совет. 2. Какая хорошая погода! 3. Мне очень жаль, но у меня плохие новости для вас. 4. Я думаю, что только работа может ему помочь. 5. Это трудная работа. 6. Он любит давать советы своим друзьям. 7. Я не люблю чай с лимоном. 8. На завтрак у меня яйцо и чашка кофе. 9. Я люблю бутерброды с яйцом или сыром. 10. Волосы у нее черные, а глаза голубые. 11. Эти деньги не мои, я не могу их взять. 12. И плохую погоду я не выхожу. 13. Этот книжный шкаф сделан из дуба.

### 1.3. Имя существительное в роли определения

Существительное может служить в качестве определения к другому существительному. Такое существительное может быть

- в притяжательном падеже, например, *the professor's opinion, the manager's signature, reader's conference*;
- в общем падеже, то есть без изменения своей формы. Такое существительное переводится на русский язык прилагательным, существительным в родительном падеже, предложным оборотом или причастным оборотом:

*an iron bridge* - железный мост

*light waves* - световые волны

*an institute building* - здание института

*an exchange agreement* - соглашение об обмене

*war damage* - ущерб, нанесенный войной.

Имя существительное может иметь в качестве определения два и более существительных в общем падеже, а существительное в функции определения может, в свою очередь, иметь определение,



выраженное существительным, прилагательным или причастием. В таких случаях необходимо внимательно прочитать и проанализировать выражение, чтобы разбить его на составляющие части. Чаще всего помогает прием чтения от ключевого слова к началу цепочки слов: *home market prices* - цены внутреннего рынка.

Существительное с предшествующим числительным, служащее определением, обычно стоит в форме единственного числа: *a five-pound note* - банкнота в пять фунтов, *a two-car garage* – гараж на две машины, *a two-week holiday* – двухнедельные каникулы.

**Упр. 55.** Переведите следующие словосочетания, обращая внимание местоположение слов.

bank credit - credit bank, construction firm - firm construction, business world - world business, world market - market world, quality standard - standard quality, equipment safety — safety equipment, sales discount - discount sales

**Упр. 56.** Переведите следующие цепочки слов.

air quality standards

emission regulations

data processing equipment

automobile repair plant construction project

a four-year degree course

fast growing peace market

**Упр. 57.** Переделайте предложенные определения согласно примеру.

Пример: A device that scans bar codes is called *a bar code scanner*.

1. A unit that gives a visual display of information on a screen is called ...

2. A device that reads magnetic cards ... 3. A device that prints using a laser as the light source ... 4. A unit that holds magnetic disks ... 5. A device that prints using a jet of ink ... 6. A package for making presentations using multimedia ...

## ГЛАВА 2. МЕСТОИМЕНИЕ

### 2.1. Формы местоимений

Личные местоимения имеют 5 форм: именительный, объектный, притяжательный падежи в присоединительной и абсолютной форме, и форму возвратных местоимений.

**Упр. 1.** Заполните пропуски в таблице недостающими формами местоимений.

	Именит.	Объектный	Притяжательный		Возвратные
			присоединит. форма	абсолютная форма	
1 л., ед.ч.	I	me	my	mine	myself
3 л., ед.ч.		him		his	
3 л., ед.ч.	she				herself
3 л., ед.ч.			its	its	
1 л., мн.ч.	we				ourselves
2 л., мн.ч.		you		yours	
3 л., мн.ч.		them			themselves

#### Местоимения в именительном падеже

Местоимения в именительном падеже употребляются:

- в качестве подлежащего в простых предложениях и в главной и придаточной частях сложных предложений;
- при сравнении подлежащих 2-х предложений;
- в конструкциях типа: *It was he at the door.*

**Упр. 2.** Определите предложения, в которых местоимения употреб-

лены в правильной форме.

1. It was I whom called you last night. 2. It is true that I am taller than he. 3. It must have been he whom the police arrested. 4. If you were me would you lend him money? 5. My teacher thinks that I am more intelligent than him.

### **Местоимения в объектном падеже**

Местоимения в объектном падеже употребляются:

- в качестве прямых и косвенных дополнений к глаголам;
- в предложных дополнениях;
- при сравнении дополнений двух предложений.

**Упр. 3.** Используйте личные местоимения в именительном падеже в объектном падеже:

1. Do you know ... (he)? 2. Who is there? – It's ... (I). 3. They invite ... (we) to their party. 4. And do you invite ... (they)? 5. Ask ... (she) to come, too.

**Упр. 4.** Заполните пропуски нужным объектным местоимением.

1. Our parents worry about my brother more than about ... . 2. Mary asked us not to leave without ... . 3. The doctor ... he visited specialized in eye diseases. 4. If I see ... tonight, I will tell him to call you. 5. No one likes that waitress because it takes ... so long to bring the food.

**Упр. 5.** Определите предложения, в которых местоимения употреблены в правильной форме.

1. The students whom live across the street make a lot of noise. 2. No one knows what happened except you, Flassy, and I. 3. It must have been he whom we saw at the movie. 4. This is a good picture of him. 5. I think that the teacher knows whom took these photographs.

**Упр. 6.** Определите падеж личных местоимений и используйте их в своих предложениях.

Пример: *She is the Nominative Case.*

*Her is the Objective Case.*

*You is the Nominative Case and the Objective Case.*

The Singular - *it, she, him, me, her, I, he*. The Plural - *we, them, you, they, us*.

### **Притяжательные местоимения**

Притяжательные местоимения выражают принадлежность и употребляются перед существительным (в качестве определения) и перед герундием. Абсолютная форма притяжательных местоимений используется:

- вместо существительного в функции подлежащего или дополнения;

- после глагола to be и предлога, чтобы указать на принадлежность; ~ при сравнении 2-х дополнений одного класса, имеющих разных владельцев. Например:

*It is her dictionary. Yours is on the shelf.*

*Here is your CD, but where is mine?*

*I found an old resume of yours in this file.*

*Their PC can calculate derivatives faster than ours.*

**Упр. 7.** Заполните пропуски нужным притяжательным местоимением.

1. He doesn't realize that ... whistling annoys the class. 2. Charlotte insisted the coat was ... . 3. The queen greeted ... subjects outside the palace. 4. I brought my car, but Phil refused to bring ... . 5. The little boy dropped his ice-cream, so his mother gave him ... . 6. I did ... best on the homework. 7. Didn't you tell me that a friend of ... is staying with you?

**Упр. 8.** Определите предложения, в которых местоимения употреблены в правильной форме.

1. The student whom forgot his books is going to be unhappy tonight. 2. Her mother reminded her three times to do her homework. 3. Your cat is much larger than me. 4. The director has no idea whose car is blocking his. 5. If I can do my homework you should certainly be able to do yours. 6.

George brought a friend of his to class yesterday.

**Упр. 9.** Выберите правильную форму притяжательного местоимения.

1. This is (my, mine) bag. 2. This bag is (my, mine). 3. Is (her, hers) family large or small? 4. (Her, hers) skates are better than (your, yours). 5. Whose hat is this? - It's (my, mine). 6. Is he a friend of (your, yours)? 7. Don't stay at (their, theirs) house; stay at (our, ours). 8. She is in bed in (her, hers) room. 9. (My, mine) pen won't write, please, give me (your, yours). 10. She's an old friend of (my, mine). 11. Is this dictionary (my, mine) or (your, yours)? 12. (Her, hers) is the best composition,

**Упр. 10.** Переведите на английский язык:

1. Дай мне на минутку твой словарь. 2. Скажи это ему, а не мне. 3. Где она? Я ее не вижу. 4. Доктор Сэндфорд - его приятель. 5. Что с ней? Она больна? 6. Это не моя тетрадь. Моя - в голубой обложке (cover). 7. Ей сегодня лучше. Скажите об этом доктору. 8. Я хочу поговорить с ней. 9. Возьми этот цветок и передай его Бетти. 10. Не спрашивайте нас, спросите их. 11. Это плохой карандаш. Я не могу писать. 12. Не садитесь на этот стул, у него сломана ножка (leg). 13. Моя комната больше, чем ваша. 14. Это старая книга; у нее пожелтевшие (yellow) страницы (leaves).

### Возвратные местоимения

Возвратные местоимения употребляются:

- для усиления существительного или местоимения, к которому они относятся;

- в качестве дополнения после предлога **by, to** в тех случаях, когда подлежащее и дополнение - одно лицо: *He used to talk to himself.*

**Упр. 11.** Заполните пропуски нужным возвратным местоимением.

1. He knows it ... . 2. I understand your interest for this work. I'm so much interested in it ... . 3. Jane is able to do it ... . 4. Bring back the textbook. I need it ... . 5. She has a habit of checking everything for ... . 6. Boys, I'm leaving. Finish the work by ... . 7. She'll understand the situation ... . 8.

We shall do everything ... . 9. Don't take any medicine. Your headache will pass by ... . 10. Go there and you'll see everything for ... . 11. He'll get a ticket only for ... . 12. John is making a mistake, I suppose. Later on he'll be angry with ... . 13. We prefer living by ... . 14. The governor ... will speak at the university. 15. That woman has put ... in a difficult position.

**Упр. 12.** Выберите подходящее местоимение из двух, предложенных в скобках.

1. The director will hire the person (who, whom) has the best credentials.
2. The first ones in line were Nancy, Jim and (he, him).
3. His shoes are much newer than (her, hers).
4. They offered their seats to you and (I, me).
5. It was (she, her) who asked the question.
6. No one was surprised at (him, his) winning the contest.
7. There should be no secrets between you and (he, him).
8. (Who, Whom) was it that asked that question?
9. Beverly is a good friend of (me, mine).
10. The picnic won't be any fun without you and (they, them).
11. I can't figure out (who, whom) is on the phone.
12. John did all the homework by (him, himself).
13. Everyone but (he, him) did well on the test.

## 2.2. Правила согласования местоимений

1) Два слова, соединенных двойным союзом ***both ... and ...*** или два или более слов, соединенных союзом ***and***, соотносятся с местоимением во множественном числе:

*John, Mary and I are returning to our class.*

*Both John and Ann have passed their test.*

Если подлежащим является местоимение ***each*** или ***every***, то подлежащее – сказуемое, и характеризующее местоимение употребляются в единственном числе:

*Every man and woman is eligible to vote.*

*Each student and teacher has the textbook.*

2) Неопределенные местоимения являются местоимениями единственного числа и согласуются с глаголом в единственном числе.

Любое из местоимений 3-го лица единственного числа может быть использовано вместо такого подлежащего в зависимости от смысла предложения.

	<b>- body</b>	<b>- one</b>	<b>- thing</b>
<b>some-</b>	somebody	someone	something
<b>any-</b>	anybody	anyone	anything
<b>no-</b>	nobody	no one	nothing
<b>every-</b>	everybody	everyone	everything

также *each* *either* *neither*.

*Everyone must do his homework.*

*He never puts anything back in its place.*

*Neither of these books is very new.*

Местоимение ***all***, синоним местоимения ***everybody***, является местоимением множественного числа.

3) Когда два слова соединены разделительными союзами ***either ... or, neither ... nor, not only ... but also***, то число сказуемого и местоимения определяется по той части подлежащего, которая ближе к сказуемому:

*Either the students or the teacher will give you his\_ book.*

*Neither the professor nor the assistant-professors discuss their preparation for lectures with students.*

4) Выражение ***all of + noun*** имеет единственное число, если существительное неисчисляемое:

*All of the money is in bank.* и множественное число, если существительное исчисляемое:

*All of the books have been thrown away.*

5) Местоимения ***several, many, both, few*** являются множественными и согласуются с глаголом во множественном числе.

6) Местоимение ***no*** употребляется перед существительными в

единственном и множественном числе. **No** = **not a** или **not any** и чаще употребляется в устной речи:

*I have **no** ticket = I haven't a ticket.*

*I found **no** mistakes in your work. = I **didn't** find **any** mistakes in your work*

*I have **no** time to study this approach. = I **haven't any** time to study this approach,* В качестве местоимения-существительного употребляется местоимение **none**, которое заменяет как исчисляемое существительное в единственном и множественном числе, так и неисчисляемое существительное:

*Are there **any** defects in the sample? – No, there are **none**.*

**Упр. 13.** Употребите **everybody** или **all**.

1. ... are so happy today! 2. ... is so happy today! 3. ... of them are bright scientists. 4. ... is present. 5. ... of these research workers has his field of research. 6. ... the students have their holidays in July and August. 7. Where are the children? ... of them are outdoors. 8. ... of them is so serious. 9. Where are ... the boys? 10. ... is so busy at present.

**Упр. 14.** Замените **no** на **not any**.

Пример: The poor boy has **no** shoes to wear. – The poor boy **hasn't any** shoes to wear.

There are **no** apples on the plate. – There **aren't any** apples on the plate.

She gives him **no** money. – She **doesn't** give him **any** money.

1. She has got no English books. 2. I have got no friends here. 3. He has no more money. 4. I have got no cousins. 5. They have got no children. 6. There are no boys or girls in the house. 7. He has got no toys to play with. 8. I see no books on the table. 9. I want no more, thank you.

**Упр. 15.** Переведите на английский язык, используя конструкцию **not... any**:

1. У доктора Смита нет детей. 2. У Дианы нет братьев и сестер. 3. У него нет в этом городе родственников. 4. У меня нет английских книг.



5. Не давайте вашему мальчику больше конфет. 6. У доски нет мела. 7. У меня нет времени разговаривать с тобой. 8. У нас сегодня нет уроков. 9. У нас в контрольной ошибок нет. 10. Не задавайте мне вопросов.

**Упр. 16.** Прочитайте следующий текст. Сколько разных местоимений в нем встречается?

### **Everybody, Somebody, Anybody and Nobody**

This is a story about four people named Everybody, Somebody, Anybody and Nobody. There was an important job to be done and Everybody was asked to do it. Everybody was sure Somebody would do it. Anybody could have done it, but Nobody did it. Somebody got angry about that, because it was Everybody's job. Everybody thought Anybody could do it but Nobody realised that Everybody wouldn't do it. It ended up that Everybody blamed Somebody when Nobody did what Anybody could have done.

**Упр. 17.** Заполните пропуски нужным местоимением.

1. Anyone who wishes can bring ... husband to the party. 2. Both the cat and the dog spend ... days outside. 3. Everyone should sit quietly until ... is asked to speak. 4. Anyone who turns in a paper late will have ... grade lowered.

**Упр. 18.** В каждом предложении подчеркнуты два местоимения. Одно из них неправильное. Найдите ошибку и исправьте ее.

1. Each of the companies claims their products will outlast its competitors. 2. His family was shocked when James killed themselves. 3. That chain of discount stores will lose customers if it doesn't improve their service department. 4. The *New York Times*, renowned for their news coverage, recently increased its readership. 5. Neither the students nor their teacher was happy with his test grades. 6. Just offstage stood the conductor and its assistants with their equipment. 7. The secretary put the letter back in her envelope and filed it. 8. Unlike his predecessor, the president feels it is in their country's best interest to reduce taxes. 9. Alaska's North Slope has found itself full of geologists and its seismic equipment.

**Упр. 19.** Найдите ошибки в согласовании местоимений или формы глагола.

1. Neither the reporters nor the editor have received their paycheck. 2. Everyone have to use their identification number to activate the computer. 3. In the bus sit the musicians, each holding their instrument. 4. The boy's new jeans is so old that they look like a rag. 5. Anyone who abuse their children should be punished for their actions. 6. No one are as ambitious as who want to be rich. 7. Both London and Paris is crowded in the summer because it is so famous. 8. The list of special courses are available at the front desk because they are requested by so many students. 9. The hundred thousand dollars were found because the thief dropped them while escaping.

### **3.3. Вопросительные местоимения и относительные местоимения**

#### **Относительные местоимения**

Местоимения, которые вводят определительные придаточные предложения, относятся к предшествующим существительным. Выбор такого местоимения зависит от определяемого существительного:

*who, whom* - относятся к людям и домашним животным;

*which* - к предметам, собирательным существительным и к животным;

*that, whose* - применимы ко всем типам существительных.

#### **Вопросительные местоимения**

Назовите вопросительные местоимения, которые вы знаете. Как называются вопросы, которые начинаются с вопросительного слова? Помните, что вопрос к подлежащему всегда требует глагола в форме 3-го лица единственного числа вне зависимости от того, идет ли речь об одном или нескольких лицах и предметах. Например:

My wife and daughter are tall. - Who is tall?

This article and that story are very interesting. - What is interesting?

**Упр. 20.** Поставьте вопросы с *who* или *what* к выделенным словам.

1. Bob is an interpreter. 2. It's Novikov. 3. I have an Italian newspaper. 4. Mrs Brown is a librarian. 5. Lucy is a good journalist. 6. George is a builder. 7. Mike is a bus-driver.

### 3.4. Употребление неопределенных местоимений и их производных

Употребление неопределенных местоимений и их производных зависит от того, является ли утвердительным, вопросительным или отрицательным предложение, в котором они используются. Местоимение *some* и его производные употребляются в утвердительных предложениях, а *any* в отрицательных предложениях, общих вопросах и условных предложениях.

*Some* (а не *any*) употребляется в специальных вопросах, а также в общих вопросах, если они содержат просьбу, предложение, приглашение или спрашивающий рассчитывает на положительный ответ:

*Would you like something to add?*

*Can I have some cold water?*

*Did someone just knock at the door?*

**Упр. 21.** Заполните пропуски местоимениями *some, any* и их производными

(*something, somewhere, someone, anyone, anything*).

a) A Did you buy ... at the shops?

B No, I didn't have ... money.

b) A Can I have ... to eat, Mum? I'm starving.

B Look at the fridge. I think there's ... cheese.

A There isn't ... in the fridge. It's completely empty.

c) A Did you meet ... interesting at the party?

B Yes, I met ... you know. Carlos, from Spain.

d) A I bought ... meat and ... grapes.

B Did you buy ... cooking oil?

A I couldn't. They didn't have ... .

e) A Have you got ... scissors?

B Yes, I have. They are ... in the kitchen, but I'm not sure exactly

where.

**Упр. 22.** Переведите на английский язык:

1. В семье есть другие дети? - Нет, я единственный ребенок. 2. Твой брат студент, и ему 19 лет, не так ли? – Да, он студент, но ему 18 лет, а не 19. 3. На улице много народу. 4. В кувшине нет молока. 5. У них двое детей - мальчик и девочка. 6. Такие люди есть, не правда ли? 7. За вашей школой есть сад? - Да. 8. В вашем городе есть парки? - Да, но немного, два или три. 9. У вас есть вопросы? 10. На столе около окна стоят часы. 11. Твои книги и тетради на полке. 12. На полке есть тетради? - Да, это мои тетради. 13. Что там на столе? - Там чайник и чашка. 14. Кто в соседней комнате? 15. Петь кто-нибудь в соседней комнате? 16. Есть в вашей аудитории книжные шкафы? 17. На столе есть сахар, но мало. 18. У Бенни много игрушек. 19. У Тома игрушек мало. 20. Времени у нас мало, уже половина второю.

**Упр. 23.** Заполните пропуски местоимениями, образованными комбинацией *some, any, no, every + one, body, thing, where*.

1. Put the picture ..., I don't mind where. 2. Does ... want a game of tennis? 3. What's the noise? Can you hear ... screaming? 4. I'm going to the shops. Do you want ...? 5. You look familiar. Haven't I seen you ... before? 6. She left the room without saying ... . 7. Is there ... quiet we can go to talk in private? 8. This doesn't look a very nice restaurant. Can't we go ... else? 9. I must have asked fifteen people, but ... knows the answer. 10. Midas was a king in Greek mythology. ... he touched turned to gold.

**Упр. 24.** Заполните пропуски предложенными словами. Некоторые слова можно использовать больше, чем один раз.

*any, anywhere, everywhere, somewhere, nothing, everyone / body, anyone / body, someone / body, everyone / body, anything, no-one/ body*

“Is ... here?”, said Mrs Thomas to the students on the coach. “Is ... missing?” “I think ... is missing”, replied one student. “It's Peter.” “Does ... know where he is?” asked Mrs Thomas. ... answered.

Mrs Thomas asked Mr Smith to go back into the museum to look for

Peter. Ten minutes later Mr Smith returned alone. "I can't find him ...", he said. "I looked ...". "Did Peter say ... to ...?" said Mrs Thomas to the students.

"No, ... at all", muttered several students. "... suggestions?" said Mrs Thomas.

"I think ... should go and look for him. One of us is bound to find him," suggested another student. "He must be ..." "But where?" said Mrs Thomas. "He could be ...".

So ... got off the coach, went back to the museum and spread out to search for Peter. After a few minutes ... found him, still engrossed by the museum fascinating exhibits.

### 3.5. Употребление местоимений **this, that (these, those), another, other**

Указательные местоимения **this, that** имеют форму множественного числа **these, those**, а местоимение **another** употребляется всегда только с существительным в единственном числе. Местоимение **other** употребляется как с единственным, так и со множественным числом существительного и имеет при себе либо определенный артикль, либо не имеет артикля в соответствии с правилами употребления артиклей. Существует также существительное множественного числа **the others** - другие, остальные.

**Упр. 25.** Переведите на русский язык.

*Примечание.* Когда местоимения **these, those** выступают в роли подлежащего, они переводятся на русский как «это».

Пример: *This is a good pencil.* - Это хороший карандаш.

*These are good pencils.* - Это хорошие карандаши.

1. These sentences are not very long, are they? 2. This isn't a box. 3. These are not boxes. 4. This book is very interesting. 5. Those were not very interesting books, 6. These are simple sentences. 7. This phoneme is easy, those two were more difficult. 8. These are my notebooks. 9. Are these your things? 10. Those were very beautiful flowers. 11. Take those flowers, they are very nice. 12. These are my shoes.

**Упр. 26.** Измените указательные местоимения, поставив их в единственное число, и проведите все необходимые изменения:

1. These are phonemes. 2. We have English and French books. 3. Roses are beautiful flowers, 4. Houses have roofs. 5. Those are little children. 6. Foxes are animals. 7. Watches are small clocks. 8. Classrooms have blackboards. 9. These are old oaks. 10. Dogs have tails. 11. Those boys are good friends. 12. Balls are round.

**Упр. 27.** Поставьте в пропуски одно из местоимений (*the*) *other*, *another*, (*the*) *others*.

1. I lost my watch, my pen and some ...things. 2. The village is on ...side of the river. 3. You are wet through. Change into ... clothes. 4. I must put on ... coat before going to the party. 5. "Have you any ... books on the subject?" "I am sorry, but there are no ... . 6. Take this chair away and bring me ... . 7. Give me ... glove. 8. "Is there ... train to Kiev this evening?" "Yes, there is one that leaves at midnight and there are two ... that leave early in the morning". 9. He took two books and left ... on the table. 10. I saw Michael just ... day in Hyde Park. 11. Heather goes to her cottage in the country every ... weekend.

### 3.6. Местоимения *much*, *many*, *little* и *few*

В качестве местоимений-прилагательных эти местоимения употребляются следующим образом:

	Исчисляемые существительные	Неисчисляемые существительные
<b>Много:</b>	<i>many</i> <i>Do you study many plant cells?</i>	<i>much</i> <i>I haven't much work to do today.</i>
<b>Мало:</b>	<i>few</i> <i>He has few friends.</i>	<i>little</i> <i>I have very little time.</i>

*Much* и *many* употребляются главным образом в вопроситель-

ных и отрицательных предложениях. В утвердительных предложениях ***much*** и ***many*** употребляются только, когда они определяются словами ***very, rather, too, so, as, how*** или когда они служат подлежащим или определением к подлежащему:

*There are **too many** pages in this article.*

***Many** people attended the meeting.*

В других случаях в утвердительных предложениях употребляются выражения ***a lot (of), lots, plenty (of)*** и ряд других:

*We have **plenty of** time.                      Russia exports **a great deal of** timber.*

***A little** переводится как немного, а **a few** немного, несколько:*

*Please, give me **a little** water.                      We have **a few** experimental results.*

***The little** переводится как *то небольшое количество*, а **the few** - *те несколько, те немногие*:*

*The violence, fear and mistrust eventually erode **the little** commercial initiative that remains in these places.*

*Gold is one of **the few** metals which are found in the state.*

**Упр. 28.** Перефразируйте предложения, используя слова ***few, a few, little, a little***. Сделайте другие необходимые изменения.

1. Help yourself to a biscuit. There are one or two left in the tin. 2. My days are so busy that I don't have much time for relaxation. 3. She's exceptionally generous. Hardly anyone gives more money to charity than she does. 4. There's a tiny bit of butter left, but not much. 5. He keeps trying, although he doesn't have much chance of success. 6. "I'm afraid you need three or four fillings," said the dentist. 7. He must have made a hundred clocks in his life, but only one or two of them ever worked properly. 8. She wasn't very hungry. She just had one or two spoonfuls of soup.

### 3.7. Обзорные упражнения на местоимения

**Упр. 29.** Образуйте степени сравнения прилагательных:

Old, bad, cold, yellow, loud, clean, large, cosy, comfortable, green, modern, long, red, dark, good, small, interesting, difficult, important, easy.

### Упр. 30.

**А.** Измените предложения по образцу

Пример: Tom is *as clever as* Jim. – Tom is *not so (as) clever as* Jim.

1. The Thames is as long as you say. 2. She is as proud as her sister. 3. My pen is as good as yours. 4. This armchair is as comfortable as that one in Father's study. 5. The film is as interesting as the play. 6. My bag is as heavy as hers. 7. A tram is as quick as a bus. 8. She is as beautiful as her mother. 9. The furniture in her bedroom is as modern as in the sitting-room. 10. My dressing-table is as small as yours.

**В.** Измените полученные отрицательные предложения по образцу.

Пример: Tom is *not (as, so) clever as* Jim. – Jim is *cleverer than* Tom.

**Упр. 31.** Все следующие предложения содержат местоимения. Если предложение неправильно, найдите и исправьте ошибку.

1. The local soccer team has a season record that will put them in the final competition. 2. Mary reads just as well as him. 3 Do you actually believe it is they who sent the letter? 4. The children were extremely boisterous, which annoyed their teacher. 5. When a person decides to move from the city to a farm, they should be prepared to make some mistakes. 6. You will never be able to convince him or her. 7. Him that speaks before he thinks will get himself in trouble. 8. The last owner of this house obviously didn't enjoy working outdoors because they neglected the lawn. 9. The coach appreciated them giving him a new jacket. 10. The crowd was so large that it took us a long time to get through them. 11. One or the other of these people must give up their turn to speak. 12. The engineers studied the data carefully, but it didn't seem correct. 13. I forgot my books, which will force me to return home to get them. 14. There is some disagreement among they who were at the meeting. 15. The teacher made all these improvements themselves. 16. She is very sad, which makes me sad, too. 17. You cannot please both George and me. 18. Did you know it was him who started the fire in the wastebasket?

**Упр. 32.** Переведите на английский язык, используя правильную форму местоимения:



1. Это мои перчатки, а где твои? 2. Это мой или твой карандаш? 3. Это твой карандаш. Мой зеленый. 4. Возьми эту лампу и поставь на мой стол. 5. Это твои тетради? 6. Я не могу взять этот зонтик, он не мой. 7. Кто из вас Нелли? - Это я. 8. Они нас не знают, но мы хорошо их знаем. 9. Это очень странные факты. 10. Мне нравятся твои туфли, но мои лучше. 11. Что с ним? Он болен? 12. Какие книги вы любите? 16. Кто там? - Это я.

**Упр. 33.** Выберите требуемый по контексту вариант

1. I have three dogs. *All/ Every* of them love going for a walk, but *neither/ none* of them likes being brushed. 2. You can borrow *either/each* the Renault or the Rover. They're *all/ both* in the garage. 3. My two daughters are *each/ both* good at languages, but *none/ neither* of them can do math at all. 4. I have a shower *every/each* day. 5. I've got thirty people in my class, and *every/ each* student is special to me. 6. 'How much are the roses?' 'One pound *either/ each*. 7. I have *any/ no* idea how I spend all my money. At the end of *every/ either* month, it's all gone. 8. I know *every/ each* word of his songs by heart. 9. There are fifteen rooms in this hotel. *Each/ Every* room is a little different. 10. You can have *either/ each* an orange or an apple, but you can't have *either/both*. 11. "Tea or coffee?" "*Either/ Neither*, thanks. I've got to rush." 12. 'Red wine or white?' '*Either/Neither*, whichever is open.' 13. I know *either/both* Robert and his brother, but I don't like *both/ either* of them. 14. 'Can you help me with my homework?' 'Sure. *None/ No* problem.' 15. I have four brothers. *Every/ Each* of us is different.

**Упр. 34.** Заполните пропуски требуемым по контексту местоимением из предложенного списка

*a) it    b) their    c) its    d) all    e) some    f) another*

Chinese people have made the most successful study of earthquakes because China has had the world's worst earthquakes. Two times in (1) ... history, in 1556 and in 1976, more than half a million people lost (2) ... lives in earthquakes. In the winter of 1974-1975 there were readable signs twice. Almost (3) ... the people left the cities, but the earthquake did not happen. Two months later the experts again warned the people. (4) ...

were unwilling to leave (5) ... homes. (6) ... thought (7) ... was (8) ... false alarm. However, the police evacuated the dangerous areas. This time a severe earthquake did happen. Thousands of lives were saved.

*g) who; h) every; i) everybody; j) what; k) which; l) a few; m) little*

To know (9) ... is going on in the world is (10) ... person's right today, but it was once the luxury of (11) ... leaders. Even so, the knowledge of events was slow in getting to the privileged class. Today, a worldwide system of communication makes news available quickly to nearly (12) ... (13) ... can read, to (14) ... person (15) ... has a radio, to (16) ... (17) ... can watch TV.

### Тесты на местоимения

**Упр. 35.** Выберите правильный ответ (в некоторых случаях правильным может быть больше, чем один вариант).

1. I'm going to a wedding on Saturday. ... is getting married.

A a friend of me      B a friend of mine      C one my friends

2. What time shall we ... this evening?

A meet      B meet us      C meet ourselves

3. They live on a busy road. ... a lot of noise from the traffic.

A it must be      B there must be      C there must have      D it must have

4. He's lazy. He never does ... work.

A some      B any      C no

5. "What would you like to eat?" "I don't mind ... - whatever you have got."

A something      B anything      C nothing

6. We couldn't buy anything because ... of the shops were open.

A all      B no one      C none      D nothing

7. When we were on holiday, we spent ... money.

A a lot of      B much      C too much

8. ... don't visit this part of the town.

A the most tourists      B most of tourists      C most tourists

9. I asked two people the way to the station but ... of them knew.

A none      B either      C both      D neither

10. It was a great party. ... enjoyed it.

A everybody      B all      C all of us      D everybody of us

11. The bus service is very good. There's a bus ... ten minutes.

A each      B every      C all

12. "That tree looks terrible!" "The man cut off all ... branches yesterday.

A it      B itself      C its      D their

**Упр. 36.** Определите, какой из подчеркнутых элементов предложения содержит ошибку.

1. The more (A) profits US corporations earn in another (B) countries, the less (C) they need to care (D) about infrastructure and education in their country. 2. We are not against him (A) being (B) present (C) at the coming (D) conference. 3. Both (A) of(B) airliners arrived (C) on (D) time. 4. My friend makes (A) less (B) mistakes in English than (C) I do (D).

**Упр. 37.** Заполните пропуски требуемым по контексту выражением, обозначающими “количество” или “степень”, из предложенного списка

*a) much    b) a great deal    c) many    d) some    e) few    f) most  
g) several    h) little*

### **To smoke or not to smoke?**

The problem of smoking is ... (1) under discussion. Some people smoke, ... (2) don't. ... (3) of those smoking wish to give it up, and a great ... (4) heavy smokers often make ... (5) attempts before they give up either smoking or the attempts. It requires not a ... (6) will power and ... (7) of determination. So only ... (8) succeed.

### ГЛАВА 3. ПРЕДЛОГ

Так как в современном английском языке падежные окончания почти полностью отсутствуют, то предлоги играют важную роль, являясь одним из главных средств выражения отношения существительного (или местоимения) к другим словам в предложении. Предлоги выражают пространственные, временные, причинные и др. отношения. Многие предлоги имеют несколько значений: *at the table, at 5 o'clock, to laugh at sb.*

Некоторые глаголы могут употребляться с различными предлогами, меняя свое значение в зависимости от предлога: *to look at sb* - смотреть на кого-то; *to look for sb* - искать кого-то; *to look after sb* - присматривать за кем-то.

Предлоги также входят в состав большого числа словосочетаний и выражений. Некоторые глаголы в английском языке требуют после себя предлога, в то время как после соответствующих им русских глаголов предлог не употребляется: *to wait for smb.* - ждать кого-то; *to listen to smb.* - слушать кого-то. С другой стороны, в английском языке есть ряд глаголов, которые не требуют после себя предлога, тогда как соответствующие им русские глаголы употребляются с предлогами: *to follow smb.* - следовать за кем-то; *to enter smth.* - входить в.

Предлоги бывают простые (*of, for, on*), сложные (*below, between*), составные (*in front of, out of*).

Предлоги обычно ставятся перед существительными, к которым они относятся, однако в ряде случаев могут стоять после них, а также в конце предложения:

*This is a picture on the wall.*

*What street do you live in?*

*This novel is much spoken about.*

Следует также отличать случаи так называемого несвободного, фиксированного употребления предлогов в том или ином сочетании слов: *on duty, on foot*; а также широкое употребление послелогов, то есть предлогов, обязательных для ряда глаголов и стоящих после них: *to laugh at, to listen to* и т.д.)

Можно выделить три относительно большие группы предлогов: предлоги времени, предлоги места, предлоги направления.

### 3.1. Предлоги времени

Ниже перечислены основные предлоги времени.

**on** - *on Sunday, on the tenth of February, on sunny Wednesday morning*

**in** - *in two days, in September, in the morning/evening, afternoon*

**at** - *at 7 o'clock, at noon*

**by** - *by 3 o'clock, by the end of the month*

**from ... till** - *from early morning till late at night*

**since** - *since 5 o'clock, since midnight*

**for** - *for an hour, for ages*

**during** - *during the lecture, during the break*

**before** - *before the bell, before winter*

**after** - *after the break, after classes*

**till (until)** - *till May, till the end of the year*

**between** - *between one and two o'clock*

**Упр. 1.** Заполните пропуски правильным предлогом *in, at* или *on*.

1. I get up early ... the morning and go to bed late ... night. 2. I'm so bored. There's nothing to do ... weekends. 3. He went swimming ... Sunday morning, and ... the evening he played squash. 4. I love going for walks ... summer. It's still light ... nine o'clock. 5. I take my annual holiday ... June, but I have a few days off ... Christmas. 6. He usually starts work ... 9.30, but ... Friday he starts ... 8.30. 7. I was born ... 18 January 1998. 8. People exchange presents ... Christmas Day. 9. This house was built ... the nineteenth century.

**Упр. 2.** С какими выражениями времени используются эти предлоги?

Продолжите список, на сколько вы сможете.

in the morning

at night

on Sunday morning

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

**Упр. 3.** Все предложения этого упражнения относятся к прошедшему времени. Заполните пропуски требуемым по контексту, словом из предложенного списка. В некоторых случаях предлог не требуется.

**ago last in for at when on.**

Пример: *I arrived home **at** six o'clock last night.*

*I saw Jane --- yesterday.*

1. I was born in Africa ... 1970. 2. My parents moved back to England ... I was five. 3. We lived in Bristol ... three years. 4. I went to college three years ... . 5. I found a flat on my own ... last year. 6. I usually go home ... the weekend. 7. I didn't go home ... weekend because some friends come to stay. 8. They arrived ... three o'clock ... the afternoon. 9. ... Saturday evening we went out to a concert. 10. ... we got home we listened to some music. 11. We got up late ... Sunday morning. 12. ... the afternoon we went for a walk. 13. I bought a car a few weeks ... . 14. I had an accident ... last night. 15. It happened ... 7.00 ... the evening. 16. I took my car to the garage ... this morning.

**Упр. 4.** Употребите нужные предлоги времени.

...February; ... Monday; ... 11 o'clock.; ... night; ... the daytime; ... March; ... an autumn day; ... what time? late ... the evening; ... Friday; ... the XVII century; ... June; ... the afternoon; ... 2 o'clock p.m.; ... the 1st Sunday; ... a fine September day; ... Friday evening; ... noon; (через) ... a fortnight; ... the 2<sup>nd</sup> ... December; ... midnight; ... sunny summer morning.

**While** - это союз, за которым следует придаточное предложение (подлежащее + сказуемое). Если говорят "*X happened while Y happened*", то это означает, что события X и Y случились в одно и то же время. Например: *I met Peter while I was studying at university.*

**During** - это предлог и за ним следует существительное. Значение его то же, что и у **while** - в течение, во время: *during the film / lesson / afternoon / football match*. Например: *I worked on a farm during the holidays.*

Словосочетания с **while** и **during** отвечают на вопрос **When?** - Когда?

Словосочетания с **for** отвечают на вопрос **How long?** - Сколько времени? Как долго? Например: *I lived there for three years / six months.*

Следует помнить, что *a while* - существительное, означающее период времени: *for a while, for a long while*.

**Упр. 5.** Заполните пропуски словами *while* (1), *during* (2) или *for* (3).

1. I fell and hurt myself ... I was playing tennis. 2. It started to rain ... the match. 3. We played tennis ... two hours. 4. I worked in Italy ... three years. 5. ... the summer I stayed on a farm in Tuscany. 6. I learned Italian ... I was there. 7. We went on holiday to Florida ... three weeks. 8. ... the day it was very hot, but it was cool at night. 9. We went to Disneyland ... we were there. 10. We had a lovely meal yesterday. We sat at the table ... three hours. 11. ... the meal we exchanged news. 12. ... I was talking to Barbara, I learned that Tony was in hospital.

**Упр. 6.** Заполните пропуски одним из следующих предлогов времени.

*at    on    in    for    since    during    by    until*

1. Jack has gone away. He'll be back ... a week. 2. We're having a party ... Saturday. Can you come? 3. I've got an interview next week. It's ... 9.30 ... Tuesday morning. 4. Sue isn't usually here ... weekends. She goes away. 5. The train service is very good. The trains are nearly always ... time. 6. It was a confusing situation. Many things were happening ... the same time. 7. I couldn't decide whether or not to buy the sweater. ... the end I decided not to. 8. The road is busy all the time, even ... night. 9. I was woken up by a loud noise ... the night. 10. I saw Helen ... Friday but I haven't seen her ... then. 11. Brian has been doing the same job ... five years. 12. Ann's birthday is ... the end of March. I'm not sure exactly which day it is. 13. We've got some friends staying with us ... the moment. They're staying ... Friday. 14. If you are interested in applying the job, your application must be received ... Friday.

**Упр. 7.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим предлогом времени.

1. I lived in Paris ... five years, ... 1970 ... 1975. 2. Beethoven began his musical education ... the age of five. 3. We never see our cat ... the day it sleeps, and it goes out ... night. 4. I don't usually go out ... the evening, except ... Monday evening, when I go to play snooker. 5. Generations of

my family have lived in the same house ... 1800. 6. - How long are you staying here? - ... the end of the month. Then I have to go home. 7. I mustn't forget my library books. I must take them back ... the 24th. 8. I'm just going out to get a newspaper. If anyone rings, tell them I'll be back ... a few minutes. 9. Are you going away ... Easter, or are you staying at home? 10. I met my husband in Wales. ... the time, I was working in a travel agent's.

### 3.2. Предлоги места и направления

Основные предлоги места:

*on* - on the desk, on the wall

*in* - in the room, in the street

*at* - at the window, at the meeting, at the table

*near* - near the door, near the wall

*by* - by the river

*over* - over the table, over the sea

*above* - above the sofa

*beyond* - beyond the lake, beyond the forest

*across* - across the street

*under* - under the table, under the bed

*between* - between two chairs, between the doors

*among* — among the students, among them

*behind* - behind the house, behind the tree

*across* — across the street, across the river

*in front of* - in front of the house, in front of the column

*through* - through the window, through the glass

Предлоги направления:

*to* - to the library, to the south, to the park

*towards* - towards the forest, towards the house

*from* - from the table, from the north

*along* - along the street

*into* - into the room, into the box

*out of* - out of the house, out of the drawer



**off** - off the table, off the wall

**Упр. 8.** Выберите правильные предлоги.

1. a train \_\_\_\_\_ Moscow

A to     B for     C on

2. a ticket \_\_\_\_\_ the plane

A on     B to     C for

3. the plans \_\_\_\_\_ the future

A for     B on     C to

4. He is \_\_\_\_\_ his sister's

A by     B near     C at

5. \_\_\_\_\_ the ten o'clock show

A on     B in     C at

6. a visit \_\_\_\_\_ a college

A on     B at     C in     D to

7. \_\_\_\_\_ John's birthday

A on     B at     C in

8. What are the office

hours \_\_\_\_\_ you?

A at     B by     C near     D with

**Упр. 9.** Употребите нужные предлоги места.

... the South; ... the stadium; ... the corner; ... the post-office; ... the factory, ... the meeting; ... the sky; ... the hostel; ... the station; ... the fifth floor; ... the concert; ... the picture; ... the apple-tree; ... the forest; ... the newspaper; ... Ottawa; ... the chemist's; ... the USA; ... the air.

**Упр. 10.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим предлогом.

*at     on     in     by     of*

1. I'd love to be able to visit every country ... the world. 2. "Have you read any books ... Margaret White?" "No, I've never heard of her." 3. "Is there a bank near here?" "Yes, there's one ... the end of this road." 4. Tim is away at the moment. He's ... holiday. 5. You've got a dirty mark ... your cheek. Have a look ... the mirror. 6. We went ... a party. ... Linda's house on Saturday. 7. Bombay is ... the west coast of India. 8. Look at the leaves ... the tree. They're a beautiful colour. 9. "Have you ever been ... Tokyo?" "No, I've never been ... Japan." 10. Mozart died ... Vienna in 1791 ... the age of 35. 11. "Are you ... this photograph?" "Yes, that's me, ... the left." 12. We went ... the theatre last night. We had seats ... the front row. 13. "Where's the light switch?" "It's ... the wall ... the door. 14. What time did you arrive ... the party? 15. I couldn't decide what to eat. There was nothing ... the menu that I liked. 16. We live ... a tower block.

Our flat is ... the fifteenth floor. 17. "What did you think of the film?" "Some parts were a bit stupid but ... the whole I enjoyed it." 18. When you paid the hotel bill, did you pay ... cash or ... credit card? 19. "How did you get here? ... the bus?" "No, ... car." 20. "I wonder what's ... television this evening. Have you got a newspaper?" "Yes, the TV programmes are ... the back page."

**Упр. 11.** Заполните пропуски требуемым по контексту предлогом из предложенного списка.

*above across against among around behind towards*  
*below beneath beside onto over out of*

1. The cowboy leant ... the bar in the saloon, drinking a beer. 2. She took her purse ... her bag and paid the taxi driver. 3. Our cat just loves to curl up ... the fire and go to sleep. 4. The view from the top of the mountain was breathtaking. We could see the town and the river ... us, and people who looked like ants. 5. Last night the temperature fell to three degrees ... zero. 6. The burglar heard a noise coming from upstairs, so he hid ... the curtains. 7. The dog jumped ... my lap, and settled down for a good sleep. 8. The hunter froze as the tiger started running ... him. He had nowhere to hide. 9. She has beautiful works of art all ... her house, even in the kitchen and the bedroom. 10. These days, politicians like to walk ... the crowds, shaking hands and saying one or two words. 11. He climbed ... the wall and ran ... the field. 12. The plane took off and was soon flying ... the clouds.

### 3.3. Предлоги, которыми пользуются, когда речь идет о способе путешествия

Это предлоги *by*, *on* и *in*. При использовании предлога *by* между предлоцд, и словом, определяющим способ путешествия (*air*, *sea*, *car*, *bus* и т.д.), нет ни артикля, ни притяжательного местоимения. Предлог *on* употребляется, если есть артикль или притяжательное местоимение (*on the train*, *on my bicycle*, *on his horse*; исключение - *on foot*). Предлог *in* используется так же, как и *on*, но только с автомобилем, как средством передвижения (*in the taxi*, *in your car*).

**Упр. 12.** Выберите соответствующий предлог.

1. I saw him riding into town *on/ by* his bicycle yesterday. 2. He'd rather go *on/ by* bus than drive there himself. 3. She sent him home *in/ by* a taxi. 4. That's much too far to travel *on/ in* foot. 5. Did you take the tunnel to France, or did you go *on/ in* the ferry? 6. She rode through town *on /by* her horse. 7. Let's go home *in/ by* taxi - I can't be bothered to walk. 8. She sometimes gets sick when travelling *on/ by* sea. 9. He flies round the world *in/ by* his own private jet. 10. The quickest way to get there is *on/ by* air.

**Упр. 13.** Закончите второе предложение так, чтобы оно имело то же значение, что и первое. Используйте выделенное слово, а также от двух до пяти других необходимых по смыслу слов.

1. Air travel frightens many people.

**plane** Many people find travelling ... frightening.

2. The train is the quickest way to get to London from here.

**on** The quickest way to get to London from here ... train.

3. Sometimes it is quicker to walk than to drive to work.

**foot** Sometimes it is quicker to go to ... than to drive.

4. The bicycle is my favourite form of transport.

**by** I prefer ... than any other way.

5. We used the car that belonged to my uncle to drive to Wales.

**drove** We ... my uncle's car.

### 3.4. Предложные сочетания

#### Существительные и прилагательные с последующими предлогами

Многие существительные и прилагательные требуют после себя определенных предлогов, образуя устойчивые сочетания, которые необходимо запоминать.

**Упр. 14.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим предлогом из предложенного списка.

*for in with between into to of about*

1. I've got a cheque ... five hundred pounds in the post today. 2. There has

been a rise ... the number of violent crimes. 3. Have you seen this photo ... my daughter? Isn't she beautiful? 4. The difference ... you and me is that I don't mind hard work. 5. I can think of no reason ... such strange behaviour. 6. It took a long time to find a solution ... the problem. 7. Could you give me some information ... train times? 8. I'm having trouble ... my car. It won't start. 9. She's doing research ... the causes of tooth decay. 10. This is a machine ... grinding coffee.

**Упр. 15.** После многих прилагательных в составном сказуемом с глаголом *to be* используются предлоги. Выберите нужный вариант.

1. Who isn't present ... the lesson?

A on      B at      C from

2. Why are you afraid ... him?

A of      B -      C with

3. Are you angry ... her?

A on      B at      C with

4. What is John ill ... ?

A with      B by      C -

5. John Smith is proud ... his progress in Russian.

A with      B of      C by

6. I am quite sure, ... good results of our research.

A in      B with      C of

7. The old woman is seriously ill. All are afraid ... her.

A of      B for      C -

8. I am sorry ... the girl. She isn't able to pass the exam.

A for      B about      C -

**Упр. 16.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим предлогом.

1. The plan has been changed but nobody seems to know the reason ... this.

2. Don't ask me to decide. I'm not very good ... making decisions.

3. Some people say that Sue is unfriendly but she's always very nice ... me.

4. What do you think is the best solution ... the problem?

5. There has been a big increase ... the price of land recently.

6. He lives a rather lonely life. He doesn't have much contact ... other people.

7. Paula is a keen photogra-

pher. She likes taking pictures ... people. 8. Gordon got married ... a woman he met when he was studying at college. 9. He's very brave. He's not afraid ... anything. 10. I'm surprised ... the amount of traffic today. I didn't think it would be so busy. 11. Thank you for lending me the guide-book. It was full ... useful information. 12. Please, come in and sit down. I'm sorry ... the mess. 13. She was angry ... me ... breaking her best plate. 14. Canterbury is famous ... its ancient cathedral. 15. Bill is jealous ... anyone who has something he hasn't. 16. I'm very proud ... my two daughters. They are so clever. 17. You're very different ... your husband. I thought you'd be quite similar each other. 18. Are you excited ... going to Greece? 19. Many foreigners find driving in Britain quite difficult. They're not used ... driving on the left. 20. You are responsible ... your own actions. 21. Sweets are bad ... your teeth, but fruit is good ... them. 22. I'm terribly short ... time.

### Устойчивые выражения с предлогами

Другую большую группу устойчивых предложных сочетаний образуют предлоги со следующими за ними существительными. Именно в таких словосочетаниях происходит немотивированное употребление или отсутствие артикля перед существительным.

Некоторые словосочетания меняют свое значение зависимости от используемого предлога. Например, выражение *at the beginning (of the story)* означает в начале с хронологической точки зрения. А выражения *in the beginning* и *at first* подразумевают противопоставление, то, что обстоятельства позднее изменятся.

Выражение *at the end (of the story)* означает в конце с хронологической точки зрения. А выражение *in the end* подразумевает разрешение некой проблемы или неопределенности, о которой речь шла ранее.

Когда используются наречия *finally* и *eventually*, то это означает долгое ожидание результата, положительного или отрицательного. Выражение *at last* предполагает долгое ожидание положительного результата.

Сравните следующие пары предложений.

**a.** John and Anita got married *at the beginning* of May.

*In the beginning*, the marriage worked well, but problems soon began to emerge.

**b.** At the end of the war the soldiers all went home.

We had a long and bitter argument, but *in the end* I realized he was right after all.

**c.** I burnt the meat and dropped the vegetables, but the meal turned out all right *in the end*.

*At last* the waiter brought them their meal, but by then it was cold

**Упр. 17.** Заполните пропуски одним из данных предлогов. Запомните получившиеся предложные словосочетания. Цифры показывают, сколько раз следует использовать данный предлог.

*in* x3      *on* x3      *out of* x2      *for*      *at*      *by*

1. After running up the stairs he was ... breath. 2. My sister and I are very different. We don't have much ... common at all. 3. I don't want to go to Franco's Restaurant again. We always go there. Let's go somewhere else ... a change. 4. I don't dislike Jane. ... the contrary, I'm very fond of her. 5. ... general I go abroad for my holidays, but occasionally I stay at home. 6. It always pays to buy high-quality goods. .... the long run it's cheaper. 7. You most certainly cannot borrow my car. It's completely ... the question. 8. This is a very important decision. All our lives are ... stake. 9. I went on holiday ... my own because sometimes I like being ... myself. 10. I'll do it tomorrow. No, ... second thoughts, I'll do it today. 11. I'll love you ... ever! 12. Thank you ... advance.

**Упр. 18.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим предлогом.

1. At two thousand pounds, the car looks like a bargain. It's ... very good condition. 2. Don't talk to me at the moment. Five bills arrived in the post today. I'm ... a bad mood. 3. ... average, I spend about thirty pounds a week on food. 4. The house was ... fire, but the blaze was soon brought ... control. 5. As I'm the deputy, I'm ... charge of the office while the manager is away. 6. I can see the arguments for capital punishment, but personally I'm not ... favour of it. 7. Don't give me any money for it. You can

have it ... nothing. 8. It's a good idea ... theory, but I don't think it'll work ... practice. 9. When you go away, you'll keep ... touch, won't you? I want to hear all your news. 10. I don't think you dropped the vase ... accident. I think you did it ... purpose.

**Упр. 19.** Переведите следующие выражения на английский язык:

Решение проблемы; наоборот; в общем; в среднем; в конце концов; сам по себе; случайно; намеренно; отвечать (быть ответственным за что-либо); в пользу чего-либо; навсегда; в теории и на практике; отличаться от; иметь много общего; хорошо уметь (что-либо сделать); заранее.

**Упр. 20.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим словом или выражением из тех, о которых шла речь выше в этом параграфе.

1. After the operation, he went home to recuperate. ... he made good progress, but his condition soon began to deteriorate. 2. ... of the film, we are introduced to the two main characters, Bill and Sarah Cunningham. 3. Damien told me the other day that he wants to be an astronaut. I didn't believe him ..., but then I realized he was serious! 4. She spent days trying to decide what to do. She ... decided that the best course of action was to do nothing. 5. I've spent thousands of pounds trying to get my driving license, and now, after seventeen goes, I've got it ...! 6. They tried hard to make the marriage work, but their hearts weren't in it, and they got divorced ... . 7. The story jumps around from place to place, and there are characters introduced who don't seem to be connected. ..., you have very little idea of what it was all about. 8. I had to wait weeks for the cheque to come, but it arrived ... .

### 3.5. Глагол и предлог

Можно выделить следующие типы комбинаций глагола с частицей.

1. Глаголы с закрепленными предлогами.
2. Глаголы с последующим предлогом или наречием, совпадающим по форме с предлогом, образующие новую лексическую

единицу, которая часто имеет несколько значений. Количество таких комбинаций глаголов с последующим предлогом или наречием (последелогом) (phrasal verbs) в английском языке очень велико.

### Глаголы с закрепленными предлогами

**Упр. 21.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим предлогом.

1. I applied ... the job that I saw advertised ... the paper. 2. I think you're quite right. I absolutely agree ... you. 3. They are arguing ... who's going to win the World Cup. 4. Water consists ... hydrogen and oxygen. 5. After six months of working overtime, she succeeded ... paying off her debts. 6. It took him a long time to recover ... the injuries he sustained in the car crash. 7. I'd like to complain ... the manager ... the state of my room. It isn't very tidy. 8. Compared ... many countries, the cost of living in Spain is quite low. 9. She was concentrating so hard ... her book that she didn't hear me come into the room. 10. Do you believe ... reincarnation? I do. 11. Who does that car belong ...? It's in my way. 12. Could I speak ... you for a moment ... our plans for next month? It's rather important. 13. Gold is not affected ... moisture. 14. The work was divided ... four students. 15. The ship cruises ... Odessa and Batumi.

**Упр. 22.** Закончите вопросы необходимым предлогом.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. What are you worrying ... ?                       | 8. Who do you agree ____?                  |
| 2. What do you hope ____?                            | 9. Who did you cooperate ____?             |
| 3. What exam are you preparing ____?                 | 10. Who have you just danced ____?         |
| 4. Where are you hurrying ____?                      | 11. What disease did she die ____?         |
| 5. Who are you waiting ____?                         | 12. Who has it happened ____?              |
| 6. What are you listening ____?                      | 13. Who have you learned it ____?          |
| 7. What railway station does this train arrive ____? | 14. What have you congratulated John ____? |

**Упр. 23.** Задайте вопросы по образцу (не к подлежащему).

Пример: I'm waiting. – *Who are you waiting for?*



1. Sh! I'm listening. What ... ? 2. Jane's talking. Who ... ? What ... ? 3. Sh! I'm thinking. What ... ? 4. They're looking everywhere. What ... ? 5. She's going on holiday. Who ... ? 6. I'm going out. Who ... ? 7. I had a dream last night. What ... ? 8. I had an argument with Bert yesterday. What ... ? 9. Jerry 's in love. Who ... ? 10. Sophie's getting married. Who ... ?

**Упр. 24.** Преобразуйте утверждения в вопросы к выделенным словам.  
Пример: Who are you looking at? - I'm looking at *that man*.

1. ... - She's talking about *politics*. 2. ... - I'm waiting for *the postman to arrive*. 3. ... - He works for *the American government*. 4. ... - I'm writing to *the Prime Minister*. 5. ... - She was angry with *her husband*. 6. ... - The house belongs to *Mr Briggs*. 7. ... - The letter's for *you*. 8. ... - I stayed with *some friends*.

### Глаголы *to be* и *to get* с предлогами и наречиями

Глаголы *to be* и *to get* являются одними из "рекордсменов" по количеству идиоматических выражений, которые они образуют с предлогами и наречиями.

Ниже дан ряд значений глагола *to get* с послелогоми:

*to get up* - to climb (e.g. a wall)

*to get sth off* - to remove (e.g. a stain)

*to get off* - to leave (e.g. a train, a bus)

*to get back* - to return

*to get in* - to enter

*to get away* - to escape

*to get through* - to pass with difficulty

*to get in touch with* - to make contact (e.g. on the phone)

*to get on with/get along* - to be friendly to sb

*to get at (sth)* - to manage to reach sth

*to get sb down* - to make someone feel depressed

*to get on* - used for asking or talking about how well one has done a particular activity

**Упр. 25.** Закончите предложения нужным предлогом или наречием из предложенного списка.

*away      back      out of      over      up      out      in  
off*

1. Many people are ... work in the north-east of England. 2. Don't phone for the next few weeks. I'll be ... on business. 3. I should be ... on the 10th of March. 4. I was ... all the night with the baby. She just wouldn't sleep. 5. It had been a long winter, but at last it was nearly ... . 6. I phoned you, but there was no reply. You must have been ... . 7. Are you sure? I've been ... all day, and I didn't hear the phone. 8. We're ... sugar. Could you get some more when you go to the shops? 9. I'm ... to Italy tomorrow, so I won't see you for a while.

Попробуйте передать смысл предложений с помощью синонимов.  
Например: Many people are *unemployed* in the north-east of England.

**Упр. 26.** Закончите следующие предложения, используя фразовые глаголы на основе глагола *to get*.

1. I must put this vase in a place where the children ... . 2. I know I shouldn't let this comments ... but I can't help feeling upset. 3. How are you ... in your new job? 4. - How ... with your flat mate? - Not very well at all. He is a smoker, and I can't bear the smell. 5. Jim's only just beginning to ... his disappointment. 6. My house was burgled yesterday. The burglar managed to ... . 7. The police were called, but the burglar ... . 8. We were in the capital when war broke out. Naturally we ... . 9. The journey was terrible. We didn't ... until three in the morning. 10. Someone spilt wine on the carpet, but I ... . 11. I've been trying ... to you for ages, but you're always engaged.

### Другие глаголы с послелогом

**Упр. 27.** Повторите значения некоторых фразовых глаголов с глаголом *look*. Заполните пропуски правильной формой глагола *look* с нужным предлогом или наречием.

**to look after** - to take care of someone or something

**to look for** - to search for someone or something

**to look forward to** — to feel happy and excited about something that is going

to happen

**to look out-** attention!

**to look through** - to read something quickly

**to look up** - to try to find a particular piece of information looking in a handbook or a dictionary

1. Baby-sitters are people who ... babies while parents are out. 2. I wonder what "scratch" means. I'll ... in the dictionary. 3. - What are you doing on your hands and knees? – I ... my glasses. Have you seen them anywhere? 4. Look ...! That box is going to fall on your head! 5. It's a great pleasure to meet you. I've heard a lot about you, and I ... meeting you for a long time. 6. I looked these data ... . 7. I looked some figures ... in the textbook.

**Упр. 28.** Прочитайте примеры из словаря, поясняющие значение фразового глагола **put**. Заполните пропуски, используя нужную форму соответствующего фразового глагола.

The fireman soon **put** the fire **out**.

Please **put** this call **through** to the manager.

**Put** your books / toys **away**.

**Put** the rent **up** by 50p (a week).

The mere smell of garlic **put** him **off** his supper.

1. I'm sorry. I didn't realize I couldn't smoke here. I ... . 2. Why don't you buy your car now? They're going to ... soon. 3. Hello, operator. Could you ... extension 301, please? 4. I'll dry the dishes if you ... . I don't know where they should go. 5. The violence in America ... going there for my holiday.

**Упр. 29.** Замените глаголы в этих предложениях глаголом **to put** и

нужным предлогом или наречием из данных ниже.

**away    back    off    out    up    with**

Пример: He placed the money on the table. - He *put* the money *down* on the table.

1. It is difficult to *extinguish* electrical fires. 2. I don't know how you can *tolerate* so much noise. 3. Please *replace* the books on the shelves. 4. We *have postponed* the meeting until next week. 5. Could you please *tidy* all your clothes?

**Упр. 30.** Заполните пропуски глаголом **to turn** с нужным послелогом из предложенного списка.

**over    off    down    on**

1. It grew dark and I turned ... the light. 2. In heavy snowfall the truck turned ... . 3. My tea was ready and I turned ... the gas. 4. The lamp was too bright and I turned it ... .

**Упр. 31.** Заполните пропуски, выбрав нужные глагол (из строчки А) или предлог (из строчки В). Поставьте глагол в необходимую форму. Цифры показывают, сколько раз используются в упражнении глагол или предлог.

**A fill    give    put    try    lookx3    turn    fall**

**B out    back    on    away    up x4    down x2    round    after**

1. You look tired. Sit ... and have a cup of tea. 2. I'm looking for yesterday's newspaper. Did you throw it ... ? 3. ... on your warm coat. It's cold today. 4. Could I ... on these shoes, please? Size nine. 5. Turn ... the music! It's too loud! 6. Don't forget to ... off the light when you come to bed. 7. I live in Bristol now, but I grew ... in Leicester. 8. Have you heard? Tony's going ... with an Italian girl called Sophia. 9. Could you ... in this form, please, and sign it at the bottom? 10. Come ... ! Hurry ... ! You'll be late for school. 11. I'm ... forward to meeting her very much. 12. Pick ... your litter! Don't drop it on the street! 13. Don't worry about the baby. I'll look ... her while you're out. 14. What a pretty dress! Turn ... ! Let me

look at it from the back. 15. ... out! The glass is going to fall! Oh! Too late! 16. John! Wake ... ! Can you hear a noise downstairs? 17. I'm ... for the car keys. Have you seen them anywhere? 18. I'm going to take these shoes ... to the shop. The heel has broken already. 19. She ... off her horse and hurt her wrist. 20. I used to smoke, but I ... up last year.

**Упр. 32.** Употребите необходимые послелогии.

1. You should think the plan ... . 2. Let's put it ... for the next week. 3. Look this word ... in the dictionary. 4. He rings her ... almost every day. 4. I can't begin this work because it may take ... a lot of time. 5. It's a nasty habit, believe me. You should give it ... as soon as possible. 6. - I want to buy this pair of gloves. - Try them ... first. 7. I just can't make ... my mind about the trip. 8. How are you getting ... ? 9. How are the young men getting ... ? 10. - Do you think John is able to do this work? - I think he is ... to it. 11. After my disease I have to catch ... with the group. 12. I dropped ... at the photographer's. 13. The Browns moved ... last November. They live in a suburb now. 14. I picked Jane ... on my way to the hostel. 15. We showed the stranger ... . 16. Pick me ... on your way to school. 17. Shall we drop ... or pass ... . 18. I'll be back in the town the day after tomorrow. I'll drop ... at your place.

### Классификация Phrasal Verbs

Фразовые глаголы в различных словарях и пособиях классифицируются различными способами. В этом разделе дается их простая классификация, в которой выделяется 4 типа:

- **Тип 1:** phrasal verb не имеет дополнения: *take off*, (a) make a start in jumping, (b) (of an aircraft) leave the ground and rise: *The plane took off despite the fog*.
- **Тип 2:** дополнение находится между глаголом и предлогом: *turn smth on*, start the flow of (liquid, gas, current) by ~ing a tap, switch, etc: *T~ the light/ radio on*. Дополнение может менять свое положение.
- **Тип 3:** дополнение следует за предлогом: *look for smb /smth*, (a) search for; try to find: *Are you still looking for a job?* Дополнение не может менять своего места.

- **Тип 4:** после фразового глагола употребляется дополнение с предлогом: *look down on smb /smth*, regard as inferior: *Why do the English look down on everything foreign?*

**Упр. 33.** Сопоставьте phrasal verb из колонки А с его определением колонке В. Укажите, к какому типу (2 или 3) они относятся.

A	B
a. to talk over a problem	1. to recover from
b. to try out an idea	2. to experiment with
c to go off a person / food	3. to cancel
d. to call off a meeting	4. to stop
e. to give up smoking	5. to discuss
f. to look into a problem	6. to care for
g. to get over an illness	7. to refuse to accept
h. to turn down an offer	8. to like no longer
i to look after a child	9. to investigate
j. to work out a sum	10.to solve

**Упр. 34.** Поставьте местоимение *it* на нужное место.

1. Jan had a problem with her finances, so we talked ... over ..., and now it's fine. 2. I had an idea for reorganizing the system. We tried ... out ... and it worked well. 3. I used to love ice cream, but since I found out how it's made, I've really gone ... off ... . 4. We were due to have a meeting on Thursday, but we've had to call ... off ... because the chairperson's ill. 5. I wish you wouldn't smoke. Why don't you give ... up ... . 6. I'm sorry to hear about your problem with the Tax Office. I promise I'll look ... into ... as soon as possible. 7. The best thing for backaches is rest. Don't worry. You'll soon get ... over ... . 8. The job looks very attractive. You'd be a fool to turn ... down ... . 9. That ring is extremely valuable. Make sure you look ... after ... . 10. I need a calculator to see how much money I've got in my account. I can't work ... out ... in my head.

**Упр. 35.** Познакомьтесь со значениями словосочетания *bring smb/*

**smth up:**

(a) educate; rear: *She has brought up five children. If children are badly brought up they behave badly,*

(b) vomit: ~ up one's dinner,

(c) call attention to: *These are facts that can always be brought up against you, used as evidence against you. These are matters that you can ~ up in committee,*

(d) (mil) summon to the front line: *We need to ~ up more tanks,*

(e) ~ for trial: *He was brought up on a charge of drunken driving,*

(f) cause to stop suddenly: *His remarks brought me up short /sharp/ with a jerk.*

Какие из значений (a), (b), (c), (d), (e) или (f) использованы в следующих предложениях?

1. I thought you brought up a very interesting point at the end of the lecture
2. Her mother died in childbirth and she was brought up by her father.
3. The war is going badly. We need to bring up more soldiers.
4. The journey was so bumpy that the baby couldn't help bringing up her breakfast.

**Упр. 36.** Заполните пропуски предложенными комбинациями предлогов или предлога и наречия. К какому типу относятся полученные фразовые глаголы?

<i>away with</i>	<i>on with</i>	<i>down on</i>	<i>up to</i>	<i>back on</i>	<i>up</i>
<i>against</i>	<i>in with</i>	<i>out of</i>	<i>away from</i>		

1. We've run ... sugar. Could you buy some more?
2. Please don't let me disturb you. Carry ... your work.
3. We must try to cut ... the amount of money we spend. We just can't make ends meet.
4. Keep ... me! I've got a terrible cold, and I don't want to give it to you.
5. When I look ... my childhood, I realize what a happy time it was.
6. She's such a snob. She looks ... people who have to work for their living.
7. The only people she looks ... are her grandparents.
8. Children grow ... their clothes so quickly. It costs a fortune to clothe them properly.
9. The government have come ... a big problem in their economic policy. The unions won't cooperate, and management doesn't approve of what they're trying to do.
10. Face

... the facts, Joey, and stop living with your head in the clouds. You'll never get anywhere if you don't work at it. 11. The antique table is very beautiful, but it doesn't fit ... the rest of the furniture, which is modern. 12. He tries to get ... doing anything around the house by charming everyone, but they've all learnt his tricks.

**Упр. 37.** В данном упражнении обе части phrasal verbs используются буквально. Заполните пропуски предложенными наречиями или предлогами

*away      out      on      down      off      up      in*

1. I'd better write your telephone number ... . I've got a terrible memory. 2. Don't run ... . Come here! I want to talk to you! 3. The bird's cage wasn't closed properly. It managed to get ... , and unfortunately it flew ... . We haven't seen it since. 4. When Mrs Johnson died, she didn't have a penny. She'd given all her money ... to charity. 5. I don't feel like cooking tonight. Shall we eat ...? 6. The soup doesn't taste very nice. If I were you, I'd put some more salt ... . 7. A button has come ... my shirt. Could you sew it back ... for me? 8. It has just started to rain, and the washing is hanging outside. Could you help me to bring it ...? 9. Hello. It's Peter, isn't it? I hardly recognized you! You've shaved ... your beard. 10. Kate's having a birthday party this afternoon. Could you help us to blow ... some balloons? 11. I fell ... my horse and dislocated my shoulder. 12. And my wife fell ... stairs! One disaster after another! 13. The wind was very strong last night. It blew ... a tree in our garden.

**Упр. 38.** Многие phrasal verbs имеют синонимы латинского происхождения. Phrasal verbs являются менее формальными, тогда как слова латинского происхождения более формальны и буквальны. Догадайтесь о значении phrasal verbs в следующих предложениях и найдите для них соответствующий синоним латинского происхождения из предложенного списка.

1. I was badly beaten up when I tried to break up a fight outside a pub last night. 2. You should tell the police that it wasn't your fault. I'll stick up for



you, don't worry. 3. Soon there will be no import duties within the Common Market. They're going to do away with them. 4. Government forces in Walliland have put down a revolt by a group of soldiers. 5. The business went through a lean period at the beginning of the year, but things are picking up now. 6. Looking after six kids all day has completely worn me out! 7. Many old people are taken in by bogus officials, who call their houses, find a pretence for looking round and then steal their property. 8. I was told off for being late again this morning. If it happens again, my pay gets docked. 9. We've bought an old house which isn't in very good condition, but we'll do it up bit by bit. 10. Don't believe her when she says she's got stomach ache. She's putting it on. She just wants to get out of going to school. 11. I had a very unhappy childhood, but the delights of being an adult and a parent have made up for that. 12. I can't solve the riddle at all. I give in. What's the answer? 13. The government is going to set up an inquiry into the condition of Britain's prisons. 14. Police have ruled out murder, but are still holding several people for questioning. 15. He's a great mate of mine. He's the kind of friend who'll stand by you through thick and thin.

Список синонимов латинского происхождения.

- |                        |                    |
|------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. compensate for_____ | 9. establish_____  |
| 2. exhaust_____        | 10. exclude_____   |
| 3. deceive_____        | 11. improve_____   |
| 4. defend_____         | 12. decorate_____  |
| 5. pretend_____        | 13. surrender_____ |
| 6. abolish_____        | 14. support_____   |
| 7. reprimand_____      | 15. assault_____   |
| 8. suppress_____       |                    |

**Упр. 39.** Затруднения, которые приносят многочисленные и многозначные *phrasal verbs* иностранцам и самим носителям языка тонко подмечены английскими журналистами. Далее в качестве примера приводится статья Майлса Кингтона, опубликованная в газете *The In-*

*dependent* и написанная в форме урока английского языка по теме Phrasal verbs. Перед чтением сделайте ряд упражнений.

I. Догадайтесь о значении следующих phrasal verbs, фигурирующих в статье.

1. My sister has written, asking if we can **put her up** for a few days whilst she's in London. 2. Paul was left ten thousand pounds in his grandfather's will, so he **set himself up** as a photographer. 3. This bad weather's really **getting me down**. 4. The flat isn't very nice, but I can **put up with** it until I find somewhere better. 5. The family dog was old and crippled, so they decided reluctantly that they had to have her **put down**. 6. Let's meet on the 20th . **Put** the date **down** in your diary so you don't forget it. 7. James Gregory was **sent down** for ten years for his part in the robbery. 8. Peter thinks I'm trying to **get off with** his girlfriend, but I don't find her very attractive. Anyway, I wouldn't do a thing like that to a mate of mine. 9. Have you seen how Jane is always **putting him down**? Either she criticizes him for the way he dresses, or the way he eats or the way he speaks, and she makes him feel such a fool! 10. "I've been **set up**," thought Alice. "Joe told the director that I was incompetent, than altered the accounts making it look like my handwriting, and now I've been accused of stealing money!" 11. Jeremy, who is a very good mimic, was **sending up** the Director and the way he screws up his face when he talks, when the Director himself came into the room. You could have heard a pin drop!

II. Сопоставьте phrasal verbs с предложенными определениями.

1. to depress, make miserable \_\_\_\_\_
2. to send to prison \_\_\_\_\_
3. to establish a business \_\_\_\_\_
4. to provide a bed for someone for a short while \_\_\_\_\_
5. to imitate someone in such a way as to make them appear foolish \_\_\_\_\_
6. to write down \_\_\_\_\_
7. to kill (an animal) out of humanitarian reasons \_\_\_\_\_
8. to tolerate \_\_\_\_\_
9. to begin a romantic or sexual relationship with someone \_\_\_\_\_

10. to make someone appear guilty in order to get them into trouble\_\_\_\_\_

11. to make someone seem foolish by criticizing and ridiculing them\_\_\_\_\_

III. Теперь прочитайте статью.

**Could I say to the vet, "Here is my cat, please have her sent up?"**

*Miles Kington*

### **Learning English as a Second Language**

Part 597: Dealing with political pollsters.

*Please help me. What do I say if I'm stopped in the street by a man asking questions about elections? This was happening to me all the time during the general election.*

You say: "Put me down as a Don't Know".

*Put me down as a Don't Know, I see. What exactly does that mean?*

It means you don't want any more questions.

*I see. What does "put me down" mean?*

It means, write me down on paper.

*But in Lesson 413, you told me that "put down " means to make a lot of fun of. Your sentence was "Every comedian thinks it is funny to put down Val Doonican."*

Yes, well, it means that as well.

*So maybe the man asking the questions will make fun of me?*

No, no.

*And in Lesson 512, you said that "put down " also means to have your favourite animal killed. Your sentence was: "We are taking our cat to the vet for him to be put down."*

Did I? Well, yes, it means that too.

*So I am afraid that the man asking the political questions will have me painlessly killed when I say "Put me down as a Don't Know. "*

No, no, he won't do that, I promise.

*If "put down" means to make fun of, suppose "put up" means to take seriously.*

No, no. It means to accommodate for a few days. Here is another sentence

for you:

“My mother has written to say she is coming to stay with us, so we will have to put her up for the weekend.”

*That is a bit like a sentence I remember from Lesson 87. "I do my best to put up with your mother."*

Ah, yes, that's put up with.

*What does "put down with" mean?*

Nothing.

*Could I say "Set me down as a Don't Know"?*

No. "Set down" means to let someone off a train at a railway station.

*And "set up" means to let them on the train at the railway station?*

Mmm, not exactly. Actually, it means something the police do when all else fails.

Here is another sentence for you. "I spent three years in jail because the police set me up for the Croydon job".

*Would they do that?*

Not if you'd really done the Croydon job. "Set up," by the way, also means to give someone lots of money. For example, my parents set me up as a teacher of English as a second language.

*But the police would not give you lots of money for the Croydon job?*

No, I think not.

*Would it be possible to say to this man in the street: "Sent me down as a Don't Know?"*

Well, not really. "Send down" means to put someone in prison.

*Oh, I see. The police set you up first and then they send you down.*

Yes. Well, not quite. The police set you up, but the judges send you down.

*This is all done to make more jobs?*

Yes, I think so.

*Well, if "send down" means to put you in prison, does "send up" mean get someone out of prison?*

Not exactly. In fact, not at all. "Send up" means to make a lot of fun of.

*Ah, just like "put down". So the sentence from Lesson 413 could also be: "Every comedian thinks it is funny to send up Val Doonican"?*

Very good, absolutely right. Spot on.

*And I could also say to the man in the street: "Send me up as a Don't Know."*

No.

*And I could say to the vet: "Here is my cat - please have her sent up "?*

No.

*English is very difficult to learn as a second language.*

Believe me, English is very difficult to *teach* as a second language. It gets me down sometimes.

*Get down? You mean, as in the phrase: "Get down and boogie "?*

Where did you learn to speak like that?

*In a disco in the West End, where I also learn English as a second language.*

Ah, no, that is American as a second language. Oh, just look at the time. I think that is enough for today's lesson. I must get off.

*Get off with whom?*

I will deal with that in our next lesson.

IV. Ответьте на следующие вопросы.

1. Каким образом "преподаватель" подшучивает над проводящими опросы общественного мнения по политическим вопросам?

- Val Doonican (конференсье с характерной привлекательной внешностью)?

- тещей и свекровью?

- полицией?

- американским английским?

2. Что привело в замешательство студента в конце "урока"?

3. Какие идиоматические выражения "преподаватель" объяснял хорошо, а какие плохо?

### **3.6. Обзорные упражнения на предлоги**

**Упр. 40.** Заполните пропуски соответствующим предлогом.

1. He invested all his money ... stocks and shares. 2. Could you throw that book ... me, please? I'd like to have a quick look at it. 3. They thanked him ... being so kind. 4. They invited us ... their wedding, but we couldn't go.

5. I warned him ... the dangers of driving without a seat belt. 6. They provided me ... food and bed, which was very kind. 7. The smell of the food reminded me ... when I was a child. 8. He spent all his money ... fast cars and gambling.

**Упр. 41.** Заполните пропуски в текстах соответствующим предлогом.

### **Education**

When my grandmother was at school, she had to learn everything (a) ... heart, and even years later she could recite countless poems (b) ... memory. She was discouraged (c) ... thinking (d) ... herself, and concentrated simply (e) ... learning facts. The teachers were very strict (f) ... pupils in those days. My grandfather confined (g) ... me that he was expelled (h) ... school (i) ... playing truant just once.

It is always worthwhile for government to invest (j) ... education. Nobody should be deprived (k) ... a good education, and everybody should benefit (l) ... it. Nothing can compensate (m) ... a bad start in life. Pupils (n) ... public schools still account (o) ... many of the students at Oxford and Cambridge University. Until quite recently these universities seemed to be prejudiced (p) ... pupils from state schools. Many people objected very strongly (q) ... this and at last things are changing.

I had no intention (r) .... staying (s) ... at university after I had finished my first degree. I finally succumbed (t) ... parental pressure, but only (u) ... protest, and carried out research (v) ... the life of Baudelaire.

\* \* \*

### **The urge to get**

Electronic intelligence is being built into more and more (a) ... the items we use every day, (b) ... the office, (c) ... home, and (d) ... school. The utility of many

of these gadgets could greatly increase if, in addition to built (e) ... intelligence, they were able to link (f) ... other devices to either pass (g) ... information or pick (h) ... control signals or data. An obvious example is the notebook computer that's taken on business trip and then brought (i) ... (j) ... the home or office.

When getting ready (k) ... a trip, businessmen might want to load

some information, such as background (l) ... sales prospects and perhaps directions (m) .... getting (n) ... their sites, (o) ... the device that they will be carrying so that they can refer (p) ... it along the way.

Moreover, appliances (q) ... your toaster (r) ... your coffee maker will be linked (s) ... your alarm clock, so that you are awakened (t) ... the smell of coffee. On your evening commute home, you can signal your home to turn (u) ... the lights, start the evening meal (v) ... the microwave, and so on. All of this will be managed (w) ... a home "control center" or an entirely new system.

### Тесты на предлоги

**Упр. 42.** Выберите правильный вариант из предложенных. Иногда возможно более одного правильного ответа.

1. I'll be in London next week. I hope to see Tom ... there.

A while I will be    B while I am    C during my visit    D during I am

2. Fred is away at the moment. I don't know exactly when he's coming back but I'm sure he'll be back ... Monday.

A by    B until    C on    D before

3. I'll be at home ... Friday morning. You can phone me then.

A at    B on    C in

4. I'm going away ... the end of January.

A at    B on    C in

5. When we were in Italy, we spent a few days ... Venice.

A at    B to    C in

6. What time did they ... the hotel?

A arrive to    B arrive at    C arrive in    D get to    E get in

7. Tom's away at the moment. He's ... holiday in France.

A at    B on    C in    D for

8. We traveled ... 6.45 train, which arrived at 8.30.

A in the    B on the    C by the    D by

9. Have you read any books ... Agatha Christie?

A of    B from    C by

10. The accident was my fault, so I had to pay for the damage ... the other

car.

A of            B for            C to            D on            E at

11. Why were you so unfriendly\_\_\_\_\_Tessa? Have you had an argument with her?

A of            B for            C to            D with

12. I'm not very good ... repairing things.

A at            B for            C in            D about

13. I don't understand this sentence. Can you ...?

A explain to me this word    B explain me this word    C explain this word to me

14. If you're worried about the problem, you should do something ... it.

A for            B about            C against            D with

15. "Who is Tom Madely?" "I've no idea. I've never heard\_\_\_\_\_him."

A about            B from            C after            D of

16. "What time will you arrive?" "I don't know. It depends ... the traffic."

A of            B for            C from            D on

17. I prefer tea ... coffee.

A to            B than            C against            D over

18. They gave me a form and told me to ... .

A fill in            B fill it in            C fill in it

19. They got ... the train at Los Angeles.

A out of            B from            C off            D with

**Упр. 43.** Заполните пропуски в тексте соответствующим предлогом из предложенного списка.

*on            between            for            without            at            inside            along*

The blue-and-white trains which run every half an hour ... (1) Tokyo and Osaka are the fastest trains in the world. They are not only very fast but very comfortable. Only those who have booked seats can travel ... (2) the train. It was not possible to run more trains ... (3) the old lines so the Japanese build a special line ... (4) the new fast trains. It is very good indeed. You can eat and drink ... (5) difficulty ... (6) 220 km an hour. You can know the speed because there is a speedometer ... (7) the carriage.



## ГЛАВА 4. ГЛАГОЛ

### 4.1. Система глагольных времен действительного и страдательного залога в английском языке

#### Таблица времен глаголов

Основные трудности и тестовые задания, связанные с глаголом, определяются наличием 26 (!) времен действительного и страдательного залога.

#### Таблица времен глаголов

Время	Использование	Примеры	Используемые обстоятельства времени, предлоги и вводные слова
<b>PRESENT SIMPLE</b>	(A) Настоящее состояние дел (B) общеизвестный факт (C) регулярно происходящее действие и (или) установившийся распорядок (D) будущее действие, происходящее по расписанию или по программе	(A) My sister lives in Washington. (B) The sun rises in the east (C) I listen to the radio in the mornings. He generally buys a lot of historical books. (D) My flight leaves at 10:00	Usually, sometimes, seldom, never, every day, from time to time, often. at times, и др.

PRESENT CONTINUOUS	<p>(A) действие, происходящее в момент речи</p> <p>(B) действие, происходящее в течение настоящего периода времени или его промежутка</p> <p>(C) запланированное действие в будущем</p> <p>(D) негативные привычки</p>	<p>(A) Andrew is watching TV (right now).</p> <p>(B) My sister is living in Washington. He is writing a new article.</p> <p>(C) He is taking his examination on Friday. (D) I am always forgetting about his birthday.</p>	<p>At the moment, now, today, at present still</p>
SIMPLE PAST	<p>(A) законченное действие в прошлом</p> <p>(B) законченное событие в прошлом, не имеющее связи с настоящим</p> <p>(C) действие, регулярно происходившее в прошлом</p> <p>(D) описание последовательных событий в прошлом</p>	<p>(A) The mail came early in the morning.</p> <p>(B) John worked in advertising for ten years.</p> <p>(C) We jogged every morning before classes.</p> <p>(D) She ran out of the house, jumped on her bike and rode off.</p>	<p>yesterday, a minute (day, week...)ago, last year (month, week...), the day before yesterday</p>

PAST CON- TINU- OUS	<p>(A) Действие, продолжавшееся в момент другого, более быстрого действия</p> <p>(B) событие, происходившее в определенный момент в прошлом</p> <p>(C) длительное состояние или повторяющиеся действия в прошлом</p> <p>(D) запланированное действие в прошлом</p>	<p>(A) I was reading when the telephone rang.</p> <p>(B) We were discussing the problem at ten o'clock last morning.</p> <p>(C) She was looking very ill. I was meeting lots of people at that time-</p> <p>(D) Nancy was leaving for Chicago but had to make a last-minute connection.</p>	When, while
------------------------------	--	---	-------------

	простое действие как факт (обычное, постоянное, повторяющееся)	длительное действие как процесс (незакон- ченное длящееся в конкретный момент)	совершенное действие, предшествующее ка- кому-то моменту или другому действию	совершенное длительное действие начавшееся в прошлом и непрерывно продолжающееся вплоть до какого-либо момента
настоящее	<p>I Do- вспомогательный We глагол для вопроса You и отрицания They</p> <p>I drink coffe every day. Do I drink coffe every day? I do not drink coffe every day.</p> <p>He Does- вспомогательный She глагол для вопроса It и отрицания</p> <p>She drinks coffe every day. Does she drinks coffe every day? She doesn't drink coffe every day.</p>	<p>I am+1-я форма+ing I am drinking coffee right now. He She is+1-я форма+ing It</p> <p>He is drinking coffee right now. Is he drinking coffee right now?</p> <p>We You are+1-я форма+ing They</p> <p>You are drinking coffee right now. Are you drinking coffee right now? You aren't drinking coffee right now.</p>	<p>I Правильные We have+ глаголы: You 1-я форма+ed They</p> <p>We have just drunk coffee. Have we just drunk coffee? We haven't just drunk coffee.</p> <p>He Правильные She has+ глаголы: It 1-я форма+ed</p> <p>We has just drunk coffee. Has we just drunk coffee? We hasn't just drunk coffee.</p>	<p>I We have been+1-я форма+ing You They</p> <p>I have been walking for 2 hours. Have I been walking for 2 hours? I haven't been walked for 2 hours.</p> <p>He She has been+1-я форма+ing It</p> <p>She has been walking for 2 hours. Has he been walking for 2 hours? She hasn't been walked for 2 hours.</p>
прошедшее	<p>I Did-вспомогательный He глагол для вопроса She и отрицания It Правильные глаголы: We 1-я форма+ed You They</p> <p>They opened the door every day. Did he open the door every day? He didn't open the door every day.</p>	<p>I He Was+1-я форма+ing She It</p> <p>I was drinking coffee at 6 o'clock. We You Were+1-я форма+ing They</p> <p>You were drinking coffee at 6 o'clock. Were you drinking coffee at 6 o'clock?</p>	<p>I He She Правильные It had+ глаголы: We 1-я форма+ed You They</p> <p>She had drunk coffee by 6 o'clock. Had she drunk coffee by 6 o'clock? She hadn't drunk coffee by 6 o'clock.</p>	<p>I He She It had been+1-я форма+ing We You They</p> <p>I had been drinking coffee till 6 o'clock. Had I been drinking coffee till 6o'clock? You hadn't drunk coffee till 6 o'clock.</p>

будущее	I	I	I	I
	He	He	He	He
	She	She	She	She
	It	It	It	It
	Will+1-я форма	Will be+1-я форма+ing	Правильные Will have+ глаголы: 1-я форма+ed	Will have been+ 1-я форма+ing
	We	We	We	We
	You	You	You	You
	They	They	They	They
	She will drink coffee every day.	She will be drinking coffee at 6 o'clock. Will he be drinking coffee at 6 o'clock?	She'll have drunk coffee by 6 o'clock. Will he have drunk coffee by 6 o'clock? They won't have drunk coffee by 6.	We'll have drinking coffee till 6 o'clock. Will I have drinking coffee till 6 o'clock? I won't have drunk coffee till 6 o'clock.
	Will she drink coffee every day?	He won't be drinking coffee at 6.		
	She won't drink coffee every day.			

	простое действие как факт (обыч- ное, постоянное, повторяюще- еся)	длительное действие как процесс (не- законченное длящееся в конкретный момент)	совершенное действие, предшествую- щее какому-то моменту или другому действию	совершенное длительное действие начавшееся в прошлом и непрерывно продолжающееся вплоть до какого-либо момента
настоящее	always every day (month) usually on Monday often from time to time sometimes seldom in summer rarely never	now at this time at this moment this week	already yet just recently ever	for 2 hours (weeks) for a long time all the week (month) the whole week (month) since that month (1999)
прошедшее	yesterday at 6 o'clock when... a month (year) ago last week (year)	(at) that time (at) that moment at 6 o'clock when... while...	by 6 o'clock before...	for 2 hours (weeks) for a long time all the week (month) the whole week (month) since that month (1999)
будущее	tomorrow at 6 o'clock when... next week (month, year)	(at) that time (at) that moment at 6 o'clock when... while...	by 6 o'clock before...	for 2 hours (weeks) for a long time all the week (month) the whole week (month) since that month (1999)

**Упр. 1.** Укажите, в каком времени употреблен глагол в каждом предложении.

1. A stranger approached me and asked for a light. 2. People have been watching TV since the 1930s. 3. I'll come round and see you this evening. 4. They are broadcasting the match live. 5. I had never seen *The Flintstones* before. 6. Millions of people have seen *The Flintstones* on TV. 7. My dad tells us really funny stories. 8. I had been watching TV all evening. 9. Rosie was wearing a new skirt at the party. 10. We're going to see *The Flintstones* at the cinema tonight.

**Упр. 2.** Выберите требуемое по контексту грамматическое время.

1. I can't come to the phone - *I have/ I'm having* a shower. 2. I've decided *I will/ I'm going to* be an actor one day. 3. *I finished/ I've finished* my dinner. Can I go out now? 4. *I watched/ I was watching* TV when suddenly the phone rang. 5. *She looked/ She has looked* lovely. *She was wearing/ She wore* a long, red dress. 6. Before I went to London / *had never been / I have never been* abroad before. 7. Come in! / *had just been reading/ I've just been reading* that book you gave me. 8. *It has/ It had* been raining all night and in the morning the streets were Hooded. 9. *I had been waiting/ I had waited* in the rain for ages when she finally turned up. 10. When *you've finished/ you had finished* eating, can you wash the dishes?

**Упр. 3.** Определите, соответствует ли грамматическое время глагола указателю времени. Исправьте ошибки.

1. So far no uniform international policy against terrorism is established. 2. Some of the city's swimming pools were closed since the end of last summer. 3. From time to time even the healthiest individual needs to have a complete physical examination. 4. The city council is for some time now considering widening that street. 5. By this time next year, most students will leave school and return home. 6. Up until now, no cure for cancer is found. 7. It has been raining steadily since yesterday. 8. At the time of his death, John Kennedy has still been in his forties. 9. In the early part of the 20-th century, immigrants are coming to America in great numbers.

## 4.2. Времена *Present Simple* и *Present Continuous*

При выполнении следующих заданий следует помнить, что ряд глаголов характеризующих *состояние*, как правило, не употребляются в длительном времени. Это

- глаголы умственной активности: *know, realise, suppose, understand, believe remember, forget, think, assume, consider, expect, agree, mean, doubt* и др.;

- глаголы эмоций: *like, dislike, love, hate, envy, prefer, wish, want, care* и др.;

- глаголы обладания: *have, own, belong, contain, consist* и др.;

- глаголы восприятия: *see, hear, smell, taste* и др.

Однако многозначность этих глаголов не делает это правило абсолютным.

**Упр.4.** Определите, в правильном ли грамматическом времени употреблен глагол.

1. I get up at seven in the morning. 2. I'm liking black coffee. 3. He's speaking three languages. 4. I think Mexico's a beautiful country. 5. Restaurants are staying open late in Spain. 6. We usually eat at one o'clock. 7. He's having a flat near the centre. 8. What are you thinking of Shakespeare? 9. I'm so dirty I need a bath right now. 10. Peter's in the kitchen. He cooks breakfast. 11. What are you thinking about?

**Упр. 5.** Закончите следующие предложения, употребив каждый глагол дважды: один раз в *Present Simple*, а другой - в *Present Continuous*.

**have**

a. He \_\_\_\_\_ four cars, all of them Rolls-Royces.

b. I \_\_\_ lunch with my mother tomorrow.

**think**

a. What \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ of Stephen Spielberg's latest film?

b. You're day-dreaming. What \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ about?

**expect**

a. I \_\_\_\_\_ an important phone call from America. Could you tell me when it comes?



b. I\_\_\_\_\_you're hungry after so much hard work. Shall I get you something?

**appear**

a. He\_\_\_\_\_to understand what you say to him, but when you ask him a question, he isn't so sure.

b. Roy Pond \_\_\_\_\_ at Her Majesty's Theatre in the role of King Lear.

**smell**

a. Something\_\_\_\_\_good in the kitchen. What's cooking?

b Why\_\_\_\_\_you\_\_\_\_\_the meat? Do you think it's gone off?

**weigh**

a I need to know how much the meat\_\_\_\_\_to know how long to cook it for.

b Why\_\_\_\_\_you\_\_\_\_\_yourself? Do you think you've put on weight?

**see**

a I\_\_\_\_\_what you mean, but I don't agree.

b She\_\_\_\_\_a solicitor about her aunt's will.

**have**

a I usually pick up languages quickly, but I\_\_\_\_\_difficulties learning Chinese.

b He\_\_\_\_\_more clothes than a department store.

**look**

a. It\_\_\_\_\_as if it's going to rain.

b. What are you doing on your hands and knees?\_\_\_\_\_you\_\_\_\_\_for something?

**think**

a. What\_\_\_\_\_you\_\_\_\_\_of doing when you leave here?

b. How much\_\_\_\_\_you\_\_\_\_\_it would cost to fly to Australia?

**Упр. 6.** Заполните пропуски требуемым по контексту глаголом: *hear, listen to, see, look at, watch* в нужной форме. С глаголами *hear* и *see* часто употребляется *can* или *can't*.

1. I have a lovely view from my room. I\_\_\_\_\_the whole city.

2. A What's Peter doing?

B He \_\_\_\_\_ music in his bedroom.

3 In winter I like \_\_\_\_\_ the photographs of my summer holiday.

4. In the evening I usually \_\_\_\_\_ the news on television.

5. I find it difficult to sleep because I \_\_\_\_\_ the traffic all night.

6. Can you speak louder? You're speaking so quietly that I \_\_\_\_\_ you.

7. \_\_\_\_\_ that strange man over there! What's he doing?

8. Please \_\_\_\_\_ what I'm saying. It's very important.

9. A Where's Maria?

B Over there. She \_\_\_\_\_ the picture on the wall.

10. Oh dear! Where are my glasses? I \_\_\_\_\_ anything without them.

**Упр. 7.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Simple*.

1. I (not to drink) coffee now. I (to write) an English exercise. 2. I (not to drink) coffee in the evening. I (to drink) coffee in the morning. 3. Your friend (to do) his homework now? 4. Your friend (to go) to school in the morning? 5. Look! The baby (to sleep). 6. The baby always (to sleep) after dinner. 7. My grandmother (not to work). She is on pension. 8. My father (not to sleep) now. He (to work) in the garden. 9. I usually (to get) up at seven o'clock in the morning. 10. What your sister (to do) now? - - She (to wash) her face and hands. 11. When you usually (to come) home from school? — I (to come) at three o'clock. 12. Where your cousin (to work)? - - He (to work) at a hospital. 13. Your *sister (to study) at an institute?* -No, she (to study) at school. 14. My cousin (to go) to school every day. 15. My mother (not to play) the piano now. She (to play) the piano in the morning.

**Упр. 8.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Simple*.

1. I (to read) books in the evening. 2. I (not to read) books in the morning. 3. I (to write) an exercise now. 4. I (not to write) a letter now. 5. They (to play) in the yard now. 6. They (not to play) in the street now. 7. They (to play) in the room now? 8. He (to help) his mother every day. 9. He (to help) his mother every day? 10. He (not to help) his mother every day. 11. You (to go) to school on Sunday? 12. My friend (not to like) to play foot-

ball. 13. I (not to read) now. 14. He (to sleep) now? 15. We (not to go) to the country in winter. 16. My sister (to eat) sweets every day. 17. She (not to eat) sweets now. 18. They (to do) their homework in the afternoon. 19. They (not to go) for a walk in the evening. 20. My father (not to work) on Sunday. 21. He (to work) every day.

**Упр. 9.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Simple*.

1. They (to read) many books. 2. They (to read) many books? 3. They (not to read) many books. 4. The children (to eat) soup now. 5. The children (to eat) soup now? 6. The children (not to eat) soup now. 7. You (to play) volley-ball well? 8. When you (to play) volley-ball? 9. What Nick (to do) in the evening? 10. He (to go) to the cinema in the evening? 11. We (not to dance) every day. 12. Look! Kate (to dance). 13. Kate (to sing) well? 14. Where he (to go) in the morning? 15. He (not to sleep) after dinner. 16. My granny (to sleep) after dinner. 17. When you (to sleep)? 16. Nina (not to sleep) now. 19. Where John (to live)? - - He (to live) in England.

**Упр. 10.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Simple*.

1. I (to write) a composition now. 2. I (not to drink) milk now. 3. I (to go) for a walk after dinner. 4. I (not to go) to the theatre every Sunday. 5. He (not to read) now. 6. He (to play) now. 7 He (to play) now? 8. My mother (to work) at a factory. 9. My aunt (not to work) at a shop. 10. You (to work) at an office? 11. My friend (to live) in St. Petersburg. 12. My cousin (not to live) in Moscow. 13. The children (not to sleep) now. 14. The children (to play) in the yard every day. 15. They (not to go) to the stadium on Monday. 16. She (to read) in the evening. 17. She (not to read) in the morning. 18. She (not to read) now. 19. Your father (to work) at this factory? 20. You (to play) chess now? 21. Look at the sky: the clouds (to move) slowly, the sun (to appear) from behind the clouds, it (to get) warmer. 22. How is your brother? - - He is not well yet, but his health (to improve) day after day. 23. Listen! Who (to play) the piano in the next room?

Запомните глаголы, не употребляющиеся во временах группы *Continuous*: *to be, to know, to understand, to think, to recognize, to want, to like, to see, to hear, to feel, to have*. Эти глаголы надо употреблять в *Present Simple*, даже если действие совершается в момент речи.

**Note:** *to have* -- только в своем прямом значении «иметь». В словосочетаниях типа "*to have breakfast*", "*to have a lesson*", "*to have a smoke*" глагол *to have* употребляется также и во временах группы *Continuous*

**Упр. 11.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Simple*.

1. What you (to do) here now? - - We (to listen) to tape-recordings. 2. You (to want) to see my father? - Yes, I ... 3. Michael (to know) German rather well. He (to want) to know English, too, but he (to have) little time for it now. 4. What magazine you (to read)? - - It (to be) a French magazine. There (to be) good articles on sports here. You (to be) interested in sports? - - Yes, I .... But I (not to know) French. 5. We (to have) an English lesson now. 6. Lena usually (to prepare) her homework at the institute? - - No, she ... . As a rule, she (to work) at home. — And what she (to write) now? -Oh, she (to write) an article for our wall newspaper. 7. Who that man (to be) who (to stand) in the doorway? - - You (not to recognize) him? It (to be) John, my cousin. 8. I (to have) no time now, I (to have) dinner. 9. Your family (to leave) St. Petersburg in summer? - Yes, we always (to go) to the sea-side. We all (to like) the sea. Mother (to stay) with us to the end of August, but father (to return) much earlier. 10. Where Tom and Nick (to be) now? — They (to have) a smoke in the garden.

**Упр. 12.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Simple*.

1. It (to take) me forty minutes to get to school. 2. Hello, Pete, where you (to go)? — I (to hurry) to school. 3. When your lessons (to begin) on Monday? — They (to begin) at nine o'clock. 4. Where your sister (to be)? — She (to do) her homework in the next room. 5. It usually (to take) me an hour to do my written exercises. 6. Where Boris (to be)? I (to look) for him. - - He (to have) dinner. 7. In the evening I often (to go) to see my

friends. 8. On Sunday we sometimes (to go) to the cinema or to a disco club. 9. Andrew (to get) up very early as he (to live) far from school, He (to be) never late. 10. It (to be) six o'clock in the evening now. Victor (to do) his homework. His sister (to read) a book. His mother and grandmother (to talk). 11. I (to write) a letter to my grandmother who (to live) in Novgorod. I (to write) to her very often.

**Упр. 13.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Simple*.

One Sunday Agnes and her mother went to the zoo. Agnes was very excited. She was interested in everything she saw. "Mother, look," she said. "There (to be) a monkey in this cage. It (to eat) an apple. Now it (to give) a bite to another monkey. I (to think) monkeys (to like) apples very much." "Yes, dear," said her mother. "Now I (to want) to go and see the lions and tigers. Where they (to live), mother?" "In that big house over there. Come along." Agnes enjoyed herself very much in the lion house. "Mother," she said, "the tiger (to want) a drink: it (to go) to the dish of water there in the corner. And the lion (to look) right at me. You (to think) it (to want) to eat me up? When the lions and tigers (to have) their dinner, mother?" "The keepers (to bring) them great pieces of meat every day at four o'clock. And they (to make) a big noise before their dinner time, so everybody (to know) they (to be) hungry."

**Упр. 14.** По правилам английской грамматики в придаточных Предложениях времени и условия с союзами *if, when, as soon as, until, before, after, whenever, unless* и др. вместо будущего времени употребляется соответствующее настоящее время. Соедините следующие предложения, используя слова в скобках.

пример: She'll pay me back. She'll get some money, (as soon as) *She'll pay me back, as soon as she gets some money.*

1. I'll wait here. You'll get back, (until) 2. Give me a ring. You'll hear some news, (when) 3. The TV programme will end. I'll do my homework, (after) 4. I'll go to work. I'll have a bath, (before) 5. She'll be in Paris. She'll visit friends, (while) 6. The lesson will end. I'll go home, (as soon as) 7.

I won't leave the house. The postman will call, (until) 8. Can you feed the cats? I'll be away- (while) 9. I'll tell you about the holiday. I'll get back, (when) 10. I'll study English. I'll speak it perfectly, (until)

**Упр. 15.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в нужном времени.

1. If you (to translate) this article into Russian, I shall use it in my report. 2. If she (to be) in St. Petersburg now, she will meet you at the railway station. 3. If you (not to hurry), you will miss the train. 4. If it (to rain), we shan't go to the country. 5. When my friend (to come) to St. Petersburg, we shall go to the Russian Museum. 6. What will you be doing when he (to come) to your place? 7. Don't forget to pay for your dinner before you (to leave) the canteen. 8. I shall /be able to translate this article if you (to give) me a dictionary. 9. You will have to work hard at home if you (to miss) the lesson. 10. Where will you go when you (to come) to London? 11. The child won't be healthy if you (not to give) him much fruit. 12. I shan't have dinner before mother (to come) home.

**Упр. 16.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Simple* или *Future Simple*. (Все предложения относятся к будущему).

1. When he (to return) to St. Petersburg, he (to call) on us. 2. If I (to see) him, I (to tell) him about their letter. 3. We (to gather) at our place when my brother (to come) back from Africa. 4. I (to sing) this song with you if you (to tell) me the words. 5. I hope you (to join) us when we (to gather) in our country house the next time. 6. What you (to do) when you (to come) home? 7. If I (to stay) some more days in your town, I (to call) on you and we (to have) a good talk. 8. He (to go) to the Public Library very often when he (to be) a student. 9. As soon as I (to return) from school, I (to ring) you up. 10. You (to pass) many towns and villages on your way before you (to arrive) in Moscow. 11. I (to stay) at home till she (to come). Then we (to go) to the theatre if she (to bring) tickets. 12. After I (to finish) school, I (to enter) the University.

**Упр. 17.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Simple* или *Future Simple*. (Все предложения относятся к будущему).

1. I (to see) you before you (to start)? 2. What he (to do) when he (to come) home? 3. Where they (to go) if the weather (to be) fine? 4. He (to ring) me up when he (to return) home. 5. If it (to rain), we (to stay) at home. 6. She (to walk) home if it (not to be) too cold. 7. I am sure he (to come) to say good-bye to us before he (to leave) St. Petersburg. 8. Please turn off the light when you (to leave) the room. 9. If we (to be) tired, we (to stop) at a small village half-way to Moscow and (to have) a short rest and a meal there. 10. If you (to miss) the 10.30 train, there is another at 10.35. 11. She (to make) all the arrangements about it before she (to fly) there. 12. Before he (to start) for London, he (to spend) a day or two at a rest-home not far from here.

**Упр. 18.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Simple* или *Future Simple*. (Все предложения относятся к будущему).

1. Don't go away until mother (to come) back. Give her the note as soon as she (to come). 2. You (to go) to the library with us? - - No, I ... . I (to stay) here and (to help) Jane with her grammar. I (to come) to the library after I (to finish). 3. Ring [ me up before you (to come). 4. I (to speak) to Mary if I (to see) her today. 5. I (not to speak) to him until he (to apologize). 6. Peter (to introduce) us to his friend as soon as we (to meet) them. 7. We (to go) to the station to meet Sergei when he (to come) to St. Petersburg.

**Упр. 19.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Simple*, *Present Continuous* или *Future Simple*.

1. It (to be) cold in autumn. It often (to rain). A cold wind often (to blow). 2. The weather (to be) fine today. It (to be) warm, the sun (to shine) brightly. A soft wind (to blow). Small white clouds (to sail) in the sky. 3. Don't go out: it (to rain) heavily. 4. Take your raincoat with you. I am afraid it (to rain) in the evening and you (to get) wet through if you (not to put) on your raincoat. 5. Every spring birds (to come) to our garden and (tosing) in the trees. 6. Listen! Somebody (to sing) in the next room. 7. It usually (not to snow) at this time of the year. 8. What the weather (to be) like now? It (to snow)? -- No, it .... 9. We (to go) out of town to ski on Sunday? - - Yes, we ... if it (to snow) this week and if there (to be) a lot of snow every-

where. 10. What you (to do) tomorrow? - We (to go) out of town if the weather (not to change) for the worse. You (to come) with us? - - With pleasure if only I (not to have) too much work to do at home.

**Упр. 20.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в *Present Simple* или *Future Simple*.

1. Я приду домой в шесть часов. 2. Когда я приду домой, я позвоню вам. 3. Она позвонит нам вечером. 4. Если она позвонит вам, попросите ее принести мне книгу. 5. Я увижу Тома завтра. 6. Как только я увижу Тома, я расскажу ему об этом. 7. Я поеду в Париж на будущей неделе. 8. Перед тем, как я поеду в Париж, я позвоню вам. 9. Он не пойдет в библиотеку сегодня вечером. 10. Если он не пойдет в библиотеку, он будет дома. 11. Мы будем дома завтра. 12. Если мы будем дома завтра, мы посмотрим эту программу по телевизору. 13. Ее не будет завтра дома. 14. Если ее не будет завтра дома, оставьте ей записку. 15. Завтра погода будет хорошая. 16. Если завтра погода будет хорошая, мы поедем за город. 17. Когда она приходит в школу, она снимает пальто. 18. Когда она придет в школу, она снимет пальто. 19. Как только он вспоминает эту смешную сцену, он начинает смеяться. 20. Как только он вспомнит эту смешную сцену, он начнет смеяться.

### 4.3. Употребление *Past Continuons* и *Past Simple*

Повторите случаи употребления *Past Continuons* и *Past Simple* по таблице. В сложноподчиненных предложениях эти два времени могут использоваться вместе, если

- длительное действие в прошлом прерывается другим действием в прошлом: *We were playing in the garden when it started to rain.*

- действие в прошлом происходит во время другого более длительного прошлого действия или состояния:

*While I was working for the Health Service I decided to give up smoking.*

**Упр.21.** Выберите наиболее подходящий по контексту вариант.

Пример: The flight lasted/was lasting three hours.



1. It was 8.00 in the morning. A lot of *people stood/were standing at the bus stop*, waiting to go to work. 2. A magnificent oak tree *stood/was standing* in the middle of the garden. 3. I *studied/was studying* politics at university. 4. He *studied / was studying* the effects of radiation when he suddenly died. 5. When I woke up this morning *it rained / was raining*. 6. *It rained / was raining every* single day of the holidays. 7. I asked him what he *thought/was thinking* about. 8. I *thought / was thinking* the play was extremely good. 9. A *What did you do / were you doing* with that electric drill? B I was putting up some book shelves in my bedroom. 10. A *What did you do/were you doing* with that electric drill? B I put it back in its box in the tool cupboard. 11. A *What did you do / were you doing* before you took this job? B Nothing, actually. I only left school a few months ago. 12. A *What did you do / were you doing* in my bedroom just now? B The light was on, so I just went in to turn it off. 13. The poor *chap died / was dying*. All we could do was to comfort him. 14. The poor *chap died/was dying* early last morning.

**Упр. 22.** Поставьте глаголы в скобках в требуемое по контексту грамматическое время (Past Simple or Past Continuous).

1. I \_\_\_\_\_ (watch) TV when Mark \_\_\_\_\_ (phone). 2. What \_\_\_\_\_ (you/do) at the time of the murder? 3. She \_\_\_\_\_ (jump) into the river and \_\_\_\_\_ (rescue) the drowning boy. 4. I \_\_\_\_\_ (see) my first baseball game while I \_\_\_\_\_ (live) in New York. 5. Where \_\_\_\_\_ (you/go) when you \_\_\_\_\_ (get off) the train? 6. We \_\_\_\_\_ (ring) the police because the neighbours \_\_\_\_\_ (play) their music too loud. 7. He \_\_\_\_\_ (write) the whole composition during the lunch hour. 8. She \_\_\_\_\_ (write) to her brother when he \_\_\_\_\_ (walk) through the front door. 9. \_\_\_\_\_ (you/work) in Spain this time last year? Yes, I \_\_\_\_\_ (go) out there in '93. 10. Mum and Dad \_\_\_\_\_ (sleep) when I \_\_\_\_\_ (get) home last night. 11. What \_\_\_\_\_ (that news reader / say) just then? I don't know. I \_\_\_\_\_ (not /listen). 12. Someone \_\_\_\_\_ (take) a photo of me while I \_\_\_\_\_ (have) a bath. 13. " \_\_\_\_\_ (you / see) the match last night?" "No. I \_\_\_\_\_ (try) to

get some work done." 14. We \_\_\_\_\_ (not/know) what to do when the computer \_\_\_\_\_ (break down). 15. It \_\_\_\_\_ (rain) outside and the children \_\_\_\_\_ (cry), so we I \_\_\_\_\_ (decide) to play a game.

**Упр. 23.** Определите, в правильном ли грамматическом времени употреблены глаголы.

1. The kitchen caught fire while we were having dinner. 2. The sun shone so we decided to go for a walk. 3. I'm afraid I wasn't hearing what you said. 4. Alan read a newspaper when he heard a strange noise. 5. She was knowing she was being followed. 6. The boss walked in while I played a computer game. 7. I was walking home from work when a dog attacked me. 8. He was reading the entire book, from start to finish, in two hours. 9. What did you do when you saw someone trying to steal your car? 10. I didn't see the last goal because I looked at the sky at the time.

**Упр. 24.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. I (to play) computer games yesterday. 2. I (to play) computer games at five o'clock yesterday. 3. He (to play) computer games from two till three yesterday. 4. We (to play) computer games the whole evening yesterday. 5. What Nick (to do) when [ you came to his place? 6. What you (to do) when I rang you up? 7. I (not to sleep) at nine o'clock yesterday. 8. What he (to do) yesterday? - - He (to read) a book. 9. What he (to do) the whole evening yesterday? --He (to read) a book. 10. She (to sleep) when you came home? 11. My brother (not to play) tennis yesterday. He (to play) tennis the day before yesterday. 12. My sister (not to play) the piano at four o'clock yesterday. She (to play) the piano the whole evening. 13. When I came into the kitchen, mother (to cook). 14. She (to cook) the whole day yesterday. 15. We (to wash) the floor in our flat yesterday. 16. We (to wash) the floor in our flat from three till four yesterday. 17. You (to do) your homework yesterday? 18. You (to do) your homework from eight till ten yesterday? 19. Why she (to sleep) at seven o'clock yesterday? 20. He (to sit) at the table the whole evening yesterday.

**Упр. 25.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. I (to go) to the cinema yesterday. 2. I (to go) to the cinema at four o'clock yesterday. 3. I (to go) to the cinema when you met me. 4. I (to do) my homework the whole evening yesterday. 5. I (to do) my homework when mother came home. 6. I (to do) my homework yesterday. 7. I (to do) my homework from five till eight yesterday. 8. I (to do) my homework at six o'clock yesterday. 9. I (not to play) the piano yesterday. I (to write) a letter to my friend. 10. I (not to play) the piano at four o'clock yesterday. I (to read) a book. 11. He (not to sleep) when father came home. He (to do) his homework. 12. When we were in the country last summer, I (to go) to the wood one day. In the wood I (to find) a little fox cub. I (to bring) it home. I (to decide) to tame the cub. Every day I (to feed) it and (to take) care of it. I (to tame) it the whole summer. Now the fox cub is quite tame. It lives in my house. 13. When I (to go) to school the day before yesterday, I met Mike and Pete. They (to talk) and (to laugh). They told me a funny story. Soon I (to laugh), too. I still (to laugh) when we came to school. After school I (to tell) this story at home. My father and mother (to like) it very much.

*Обратите внимание на следующие предложения:*

*When mother came home, I was reading.*

*came* — однократное действие (пришла)

*Past Simple was reading* — действие в процессе (читал)

*Past Continuous*

*When mother was reading, I came home.*

*was reading* — действие в процессе

*(читала) Past Continuous came* — однократное действие (пришел)

*Past Simple*

**Упр. 26.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. When I (to come) home, my little sister (to sleep). 2. When Nick (to come) home, his brother (to play) with his toys. 3. When mother (to come) home, I (to do) my homework. 4. When father (to come) home, Pete (to

sleep). 5. When mother (to come) home, the children (to play) on the carpet. 6. When I (to get) up, my mother and father (to drink) tea. 7. When I (to come) to my friend's place, he (to watch) TV. 8. When I (to see) my friends, they (to play) football. 9. When I (to open) the door, the cat (to sit) on the table. 10. When Kate (to open) the door, the children (to dance) round the fir-tree. 11. When Tom (to cross) the street, he (to fall). 12. When I (to go) to school, I (to meet) my friend. 13. When we (to go) to the cinema, we (to meet) grandmother. 14. When grandmother (to go) home, she (to see) many children in the yard. 15. When Henry (to walk) about in the forest, he (to find) a bear cub. 16. When we (to walk) about in the forest, we (to see) a hare. 17. When I (to wash) the floor, I (to find) my old toy under the sofa. 18. When granny (to read) a book on the sofa, she (to fall) asleep. 19. When I (to play) in the yard, I suddenly (to see) my old friend. 20. When Nick (to run) about in the yard, he (to fall).

**Упр. 27.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. They (to drink) tea when I (to come) home. 2. He (to walk) along the river when a boat (to pass). 3. The old man (to think) about his plan when he (to fall) asleep. 4. We (to listen) to an interesting lecture yesterday. 5. When I (to enter) the classroom, the teacher (to write) words on the blackboard and the pupils (to copy) them into their exercise-books. 6. They (to get) ready to go out when it (to begin) raining. 7. Yesterday at one o'clock I (to have) lunch at the canteen. 8. When he (to come) in, I (to do) my exercises. 9. What you (to do) at eight o'clock yesterday? 10. At this time yesterday I (to go) home. 11. You (to sleep) when I (to go) out. 12. He (to read) on the sofa when I (to come) in and (to sit) down beside him. 13. I (to walk) along the street with my friend when a tram (to pass). 14. She (to look) out of the window when I (to see) her. 15. We (to answer) the teacher's questions when the headmistress (to enter) the classroom.

**Упр. 28.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. When I (to ring) up my friend, he (to sleep). 2. When grandfather (to

watch) TV, he (to fall) asleep. 3. When my friend (to come) to see me, I (to do) my homework. 4. When I (to go) to the stadium, I (to meet) Kate and Ann. 5. When Nick (to ring) me up yesterday, I (to help) mother. 6. When the children (to walk) through the wood, they (to see) a fox. 7. When I (to come) home, my sister (to wash) the floor. 8. When Mike (to play) in the yard, he (to find) a ball. 9. When I (to draw) yesterday, I (to break) two pencils. 10. When I (to meet) Tom, he (to go) to the shop. 11. When I (to look) out of the window, the children (to play) hide-and-seek. 12. I (to go) to the theatre yesterday. 13. At seven o'clock yesterday I (to go) to the theatre. 14. What you (to do) at 5 o'clock yesterday? -I (to play) the piano. 15. When I (to come) to ' school, the children (to stand) near the classroom. 16. We (to play) in the yard the whole evening yesterday. 17. When I (to prepare) breakfast in the morning, I (to cut) my finger. 18. Last year I (to go) to the United States. 19. You (to go) to Great Britain last year? -- No, I (to go) to France. 20. What you (to do) yesterday? — I (to translate) a very long article.

*Обратите внимание на следующие предложения:*

*Father was reading at 7 o'clock yesterday.*

*действие в процессе -- Past Continuous*

*Father came home at 7 o'clock yesterday.*

*однократное действие -- Past Simple*

**Упр. 29.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. He (to get) up at seven o'clock yesterday. 2. Father (to come) home at six o'clock yesterday. 3. I (to read) a book at six o'clock yesterday. 4. She (to fall) asleep at eleven o'clock yesterday. 5. Mother (to drink) tea at eleven o'clock yesterday. 6. Father (to watch) TV at ten o'clock yesterday. 7. I (to go) to bed at nine o'clock yesterday. 8. I (to finish) my homework at nine o'clock yesterday. 9. I (to play) the piano at five o'clock yesterday. 10. He (to begin) to do his homework at four o'clock yesterday. 11. She (to wash) the floor at four o'clock yesterday. 12. I (to meet) Nick at three o'clock yesterday. 13. When I (to come) home, Kate (to play) the piano. 14. When I (to meet) John, he (to go) to the railway station. 15. When I (to go) to the

museum, I (to see) a big crowd of people in the street. 18. They (to play) in the yard in the evening yesterday. 17. They (to play) in the yard the whole evening yesterday. 18. I (to clean) my teeth at eight o'clock in the morning yesterday. 19. We (to go) to the wood in summer. 20. When the teacher (to open) the door of the classroom, the pupils (to sit) at their desks.

**Упр. 30.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. At this time yesterday I (to sit) at the theatre. 2. He (to come) back to St. Petersburg on the 15th of January. 3. I (to go) to the institute when I (to see) him. 4. At this time yesterday we (to have) dinner. 5. He (to write) a letter when I (to come) in. 6. He (to make) a report when I (to leave) the meeting. 7. Yesterday he (to write) a letter to his friend. 8. When I (to look) at them, they (to smile) at me. 9. What you (to do) at six o'clock yesterday? 10. I (to go) to bed at half past eleven. 11. Yesterday the lesson (to begin) at nine o'clock. 12. The cat (to take) a piece of fish 'and then (to run) away. 13. He (to read) a newspaper when I (to come) in. 14. Yesterday I (to get) up at seven o'clock. 15. The train (to start) at fifteen minutes to ten. 16. He (to put) on his coat and cap, (to open) the door and (to go) out.

**Упр. 31.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. I (to feed) my cat with fish yesterday. 2. What you (to do) at four o'clock yesterday? — I (to feed) my cat. 3. What your brother (to do) yesterday? — He (to play) computer games. 4. I (to begin) repairing my camera at six o'clock yesterday. 5. At five o'clock yesterday Helen (to cook) soup. 6. We (to play) badminton from nine till eleven yesterday. 7. Kate (not to go) for a walk yesterday. She (to write) a composition the whole day yesterday. 8. When your father (to come) home yesterday? He (to come) home at seven o'clock. 9. When my father (to come) home yesterday, my mother (to make) supper. 10. We (not to go) on a tramp last summer. 11. What you (to do) when your sister (to come) home yesterday? 12. You (to have) supper at nine o'clock yesterday? 13. He (not to go) to the shop yesterday. 14.

Nick (to go) to bed at ten o'clock yesterday. 15. Rick (to sleep) at eleven o'clock yesterday. 16. When we (to play) in the yard yesterday, it suddenly (to start) raining heavily. 17. I (to see) Mike when he (to cross) the street. 18. He (to begin) repairing his bicycle in the morning yesterday. 19. He (to repair) his bicycle the whole day yesterday. 20. He (to finish) repairing his bicycle in the evening yesterday.

**Упр. 32.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. They (to meet) at the station two hours ago, 2. Where you (to spend) last Sunday? 3. We (to be) in a hurry because only twenty minutes (to be) left before the beginning of the performance. 4. I (to play) the violin when my friend (to come) in. He (to invite) me to the theatre and I (to accept) the invitation with pleasure. 5. He (to ring) up his friend and (to ask) him about the homework, 6. When I (to come) to the theatre, my friend already (to wait) for me. 7. Last Sunday we (to go) skiing in the country. There (to be) already a lot of snow in the fields and we (to enjoy) ourselves. We (to ski) for two hours and a half.

**Упр. 33.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

1. They (to translate) a difficult text yesterday, 2. I (to open) the window at six o'clock yesterday, 3. You (to go) to the cinema yesterday? 4. I (not to see) Mike last week. 5. When I (to open) the door, my friends (to sit) around the table. 6. When you (to begin) doing your homework yesterday? 7. We (to discuss) the latest news from three till four yesterday. 8. When I (to read) the newspaper yesterday, I (to find) an interesting article on UFOs, 9. Lena (to sweep) the floor on Sunday. 10. Lena (to sweep) the floor from eleven till twelve on Sunday. 11. They (to go) to the wood last Sunday? 12. When they (to sail) down the river they (to see) a little island. 13. We (to work) the whole morning yesterday, 14. Mother (to cook) dinner at three o'clock yesterday. 15. She (to finish) cooking at four o'clock yesterday. 16. At half past four yesterday we (to have) dinner. 17. You (to watch) TV yesterday? - Yes, we (to watch) TV the whole evening yes-

terday. 18. When you (to go) to bed yesterday? 19. I (to go) to bed at ten o'clock yesterday. 20. At half past ten yesterday I (to sleep). 21. When I (to come) home from school yesterday, r little brother (to sit) on the floor with all his toys around him. He (to play) with them. I (to tell) him to put his toys into the box as he (to make) too much noise.

**Упр. 34.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

The sun (to go) down behind the hills when I (to reach) a village which (to be) only a few miles from the sea. The working day (to be) over, and the villagers (to come) home from the fields. Along the road two boys (to drive) cows and sheep in the direction of the village. I (to approach) a group of people standing near the road and (to ask) them if I could find a place in the village to spend the night. An old man (to say) he would help me. He (to take) me to his small cottage at the far end of the street. A fire (to burn) in the stove when we (to enter) the house. One girl of about eighteen (to prepare) supper in the kitchen while two other girls still (to do) something in the kitchen garden near the house. The old man (to invite) me to have supper with them. They all (to seem) to be nice people and we (to have) a friendly talk. After supper my 'new friends and I (to go) out into the garden. The moon (to shine) high in the sky, and the night (to be) warm and beautiful. That evening (to be) very pleasant, and I shall remember it a long time.

**Упр. 35.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Continuous*.

We (to walk) down the street in the direction of Mike's house, when we (to see) him in the window of a bus that (to pass) by. He (to recognize) us, too, I but he could not get off as the bus (to be) overcrowded. We (to be) very sorry that we (to have) no ' chance to speak to him. But we could do nothing j and (to decide) to go back. At that very moment we I (to hear) Mike's voice behind us. "How funny," he f (to say), "I (to go) to your place when I suddenly (to I see) you here. I am so glad to see you."



#### 4.4. *Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*?

**Упр.36.** Определите, с какими указателями времени следует употребить *Past Simple*, а с какими - *Present Perfect*.

1. the day before yesterday; 2. a week ago; 3. in the past; 4. at that time; 5. lately-6. today; 7. a minute ago; 8. just; 9. since; 10. never; 11. this year; 12. so far; 13.yesterday; 14.just now; 15.ever; 16.1ast Wednesday; 17.last night; 18-not yet. 19.up to now; 20.last century; 21.this century.

**Упр.37.** Поставьте глагол в скобках в требуемое по контексту время. (*Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*).

1.... you ever (to visit)... Hungary? 2. Our group ... (to tour) Yugoslavia this month. 3. The film... (to produce) a good impression on me. 4. A fortnight ago the theatre ... (to produce) a new play. 5. When... you (to finish)... school? 6.1... (to happen) to see John the other day. 7.1... (to start) writing my book two years ago. 8.1... (to write) half of it since. 9. We ... (to witness) great progress in space research this century.

**Упр. 38.** Поставьте глагол в скобках в требуемое по контексту время. (*Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*).

1. Barbara Lively\_\_\_\_\_ (write) a lot of books. She\_\_\_\_\_ (write) her first one fifteen years ago. 2. \_\_\_\_\_ you ever \_\_\_\_\_ (try) Indian food? 3. I \_\_\_\_\_ never \_\_\_\_\_ (be) to Japan. When \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ (go) there? 4. I \_\_\_\_\_ (live) in London for eight years, and I don't want to move. 5. He \_\_\_\_\_ (live) in Oxford for two years, and then in 1995 he \_\_\_\_\_ (move) to London. 6. We \_\_\_\_\_ (meet) Tim and Maureen three years ago. How long \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ (know) them?

**Упр. 39.** Вставьте одно из предложенных слов в каждое предложение.  
*ever, never, for, since, already, just, yet*

1. He's worked there many years, 1986, I believe.
2. I have loved anyone as much as I love you.
3. We've known Paul two years. Have you met him?
4. I've known him we went to school together, but I've met his parents.

5. We have sold two hundred tickets and there is still a month to go before the concert.
6. I have visited New York. I'm looking forward to going.
7. Have you thought of learning to fly?
8. I have received my exam result. It came ten minutes ago.
9. Jane hasn't finished with the camera. She needs it tomorrow.

**Упр. 40.** Употребите глагол в скобке в нужном по контексту времени (present Perfect или Past Simple).

1. Carlos \_\_\_\_\_ (come) to London before Christmas. When he \_\_\_\_\_ (arrive), he \_\_\_\_\_ (go) to stay with some friends. He \_\_\_\_\_ (be) in London for several months, and he's going to stay until the autumn. 2. A I'm looking for Susan. \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ (see) her?

B I \_\_\_\_\_ (see) her yesterday, but not today. \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ (look) in the coffee bar?

A Yes. I \_\_\_\_\_ (go) there before I \_\_\_\_\_ (ask) you.

3. A John, you know I \_\_\_\_\_ (borrow) your bicycle last night. Well, I'm afraid I \_\_\_\_\_ (lose) it.

B That's awful! Where \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ (go)? What time \_\_\_\_\_ it \_\_\_\_\_ (happen)?

A Well, I \_\_\_\_\_ (leave) your house at 8.00, went home and \_\_\_\_\_ (chain) it outside my house. Someone must have taken it during the night. I \_\_\_\_\_ (phone) the police, and they're coming soon.

B OK. You can tell them what \_\_\_\_\_ (happen).

**Упр. 41.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*.

1. We (to travel) around Europe last year.
2. My father knows so much because he (to travel) a lot.
3. I (to see) Pete today.
4. She (to see) this film last Sunday.
5. Alex (to meet) his friend two hours ago.
6. I just (to meet) our teacher.
7. The children already (to decide) what to do with the books.
8. Yesterday they (to decide) to help their grandmother.
9. Helen speaks French so well because she (to live) in France.
10. She (to live) there last

year. 11. The rain (to stop) and the sun is shining in the sky again. 12. The rain (to stop) half an hour ago. 13. Mary (to buy) a new hat. 14. I (to buy) a pair of gloves yesterday. 15. The wind (to blow) off the man's hat, and he cannot catch it. 16. The weather (to change), and we can go for a walk. 17. The wind (to change) in the morning.

**Упр. 42.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*.

1. I already (to do) my homework. Now I can go for a walk. 2. I (to do) my homework yesterday. 3. He just (to come) home. 4. He (to come) home a minute ago. 5. Nick (to play) football yesterday. 6. She already (to come) from school. Now she is doing her homework. 7. I (to read) this book last year. 8. I (to read) this book this year. 9. I never (to be) to Washington. 10. You ever (to be) to New York? 11. You ever (to see) the eruption of a volcano? 12. I (not yet to eat) today. 13. He (not to eat) yesterday. 14. You (to play) the piano yesterday? 15. You (to play) the piano today? 16. What you (to prepare) for today? 17. Look at this bird-house. Mike (to make) it himself. He (to make) it last Sunday. 18. Where you (to put) my pen? I cannot find it. 19. You (to see) Mary today? 20. When you (to see) Mary? — I (to see) her last week. 21. Your mother (to promise) to take you to the theatre? 22. Look at my new dress! I (to make) it myself. 23. He is not at school today, he (to fall) ill. — When he (to fall) ill? — He (to fall) ill yesterday.

**Упр. 43.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*.

1. At last I (to do) all my homework: now I shall go out. 2. The building of the house (to begin) early in April. 3. The rain (to stop) but a cold wind is still blowing. 4. We already (to solve) the problem. 5. He (to come) a moment ago. 6. I never (to speak) to him. 7. He just (to finish) his work. 8. You (to make) any spelling mistakes in your dictation? 9. It (to be) very cold yesterday. 10. When you (to meet) him? 11. I (not to see) him. since 1987. 12. How many mushrooms you (to gather)? 13. Where you (to put) the newspaper? I want to read it, but cannot find it anywhere. 14. The new

school (to begin) working last year. 15. You (to read) all the books on this shelf? 16. I (not to see) my cousin since last year. 17. Why you (to put) these things in the wrong place? 18. Why you (to leave) the door open? You will catch cold sitting in the draught. 19. "We (not to meet) for such a long time!" said my friend. "Yes, indeed," I answered, "and we both (to grow)." 20. What books you (to read) when you (to live) in the country? 21. They (not yet to come) from the south. 22. He (to be) ill last week, but now he (to recover). 23. If everybody (to read) this new novel, let's discuss it. 24. You (to book) tickets? — Yes, I ... . I (to book) them several days ago. 25. I can hardly recognize you. I (not to see) you since you (to leave) for Moscow. And you (to change) so much.

**Упр. 44.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*.

1. He (to be) abroad five years ago. 2. You (to be) in the Caucasus last year? 3. They (to leave) England when he (to be) still a child. 4. He (not yet to come) back. 5. He (to go) already? 6. When you (to see) him last? 7. I (not to see) him for ages. 8. His health (to improve) greatly since I (to see) him last. 9. Last night I (to feel) tired and (to go) to bed very early. 10. Where you (to spend) your holidays? 11. You ever (to spend) your holidays in the Crimea? 12. While travelling in the Crimea I (to meet) your friend. 13. I never (to visit) that place. 14. He (to visit) that place last year. 15. I just (to get) a letter from Tom. 16. You (to take) any photographs while travelling in the south?

**Упр. 45.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Perfect* или *Past Simple*.

1. The sun (not to rise) yet, but the sky in the east is getting lighter every minute. 2. I (to see) you walking along the street the other day with a heavy bag. 3. I (not to read) the newspaper today. 4. It is very late, and trams (to stop) running: we must find a taxi to get home. 5. How many times you (to be) to St. Petersburg? 6. At last I (to translate) this article: now I shall have a little rest. 7. We (to go) to the country yesterday, but the rain (to spoil) all the pleasure. 8. My watch was going in the morning, but

now it (to stop). 9. The lecture (not yet to begin) and the students are talking in the classroom. 10. She just (to go) out. 11. She (to leave) the room a moment ago. 12. We (not yet to solve) the problem. 13. When it all (to happen)? 14. The morning was cold and rainy, but since ten o'clock the weather (to change) and now the sun is shining brightly. 15. Show me the dress which you (to make). 16. Oh, how dark it is! A large black cloud (to cover) the sky. I think it will start raining in a few minutes. 17. Oh, close the window! Look, all my papers (to fall) on the floor because of the wind. 18. When you (to open) the window? — I (to open) it ten minutes ago.

**Упр. 46.** Закончите предложения, соединяя строчку из колонки А со строчкой из колонки В.

А	В
a. Jane's angry because. b. Anne's disappointed because. c. Julie's excited because. d. Kate's jealous because, e. Mary's worried because.	1. she hasn't heard from her parents for a long time, and hopes they're all right 2. she's just seen someone in the kind of car that she wants to buy. 3. her boyfriend hasn't arrived and they're already late for the party. 4. she's just won first prize in a competition. 5. she's had to cancel her holiday, and she was so looking forward to it

### 4.5. *Past Simple* и *Past Perfect*

Past Perfect употребляется для выражения действия, которое уже совершилось до определенного момента в прошлом:

*We carefully examined the samples which they had sent us.* Сравните, как меняется смысл предложения при описании с использованием этих времен последовательности событий в прошлом:

*When we arrived at the stadium, the match started* (Мы успели вовремя и ничего не пропустили).

*When we arrived at the stadium, the match had started* (На самое начало матча мы опоздали).

**Упр. 47.** В каждом предложении поставьте глаголы в скобках в нужном по контексту времени: один - в Past Simple, другой - в Past Perfect  
Пример: He died (die) after he had been (be) ill for a long time.

1. I \_\_\_\_\_ (thank) her for everything she \_\_\_\_\_ (do). 2. When I got to the office, I \_\_\_\_\_ (realize) that I \_\_\_\_\_ (forget) to lock the front door. 3. When they \_\_\_\_\_ (finish) their work, they \_\_\_\_\_ (go) home. 4. I \_\_\_\_\_ (call) you at 8.00, but you \_\_\_\_\_ just \_\_\_\_\_ (go) out. 5. I took my family to Paris last year. I \_\_\_\_\_ (be) there as a student, so I \_\_\_\_\_ (know) my way around. 6. When I \_\_\_\_\_ (listen) to the news, I \_\_\_\_\_ (go) to bed.

**Упр. 48.** Соедините следующие пары предложений, используя союзы в скобках. Замените время одного из глаголов на Past Perfect

Пример: I had a bath. I went to bed. (after) - *After I'd had a bath, I went to bed.*

1. I read the letter. I threw it away (when) 2. He passed his driving test. He bought a car. (as soon as) 3. I took the book back to the library. I finished reading it. (when) 4. I didn't go to bed. I did my homework. (until) 5. I spent all my money. I went home. (when) 6. I read the book. I saw the film. (before) 7. Her children left home. She started writing. (after)

**Упр. 49.** Поставьте глаголы в скобках в Past Simple или Past Perfect.

пример: When we returned to the car we saw (saw) that someone had smashed (smash) the windows.

1. I \_\_\_\_\_ (realise) I \_\_\_\_\_ (lose) my purse when I opened my bag. 2. He \_\_\_\_\_ (lose) the squash game because he \_\_\_\_\_ (never / play) squash before in his life. 3. David \_\_\_\_\_ (buy) his ticket the week before, so I don't understand why he \_\_\_\_\_ (try) to get in without paying. 4. By the time she \_\_\_\_\_ (be) eighteen she \_\_\_\_\_ (visit) nearly every capital city in the world. 5. Paula \_\_\_\_\_ (drop) the cup she was holding and \_\_\_\_\_ (burst) into tears. 6. Why \_\_\_\_\_ (you / not speak) to Jim at the meeting yesterday? Because he \_\_\_\_\_ (leave) by the time I got there. 7. Sally was upset when \_\_\_\_\_ (you / not / eat) any of her birthday cake. I \_\_\_\_\_ (not /

can) help it I \_\_\_\_\_ (just / eat) a huge meal. 8. You \_\_\_\_\_ (look) happy when you were talking to Jackie last night. Yes. I \_\_\_\_\_ (not / see) her for six years. 9. "It \_\_\_\_\_ (take) nearly four hours to drive to the garden party, and when we \_\_\_\_\_ (get) there they \_\_\_\_\_ (refuse) to let us in!" "Why?" "Because we \_\_\_\_\_ (forget) to bring our invitations." 10. Johnny \_\_\_\_\_ (spend) seven years of his life in prison before he \_\_\_\_\_ (realise) that the things he \_\_\_\_\_ (do) to get there were wrong. He \_\_\_\_\_ (rob) banks, he \_\_\_\_\_ (burgle) houses, he \_\_\_\_\_ (steal) cars. But, fortunately, he \_\_\_\_\_ (never / kill) anyone.

**Упр. 50.** Закончите второе предложение так, чтобы у него было значение, подобное первому. Используйте выделенное слово и от двух до пяти других необходимых слов.

1. Barry was very excited because it was his first time on television.

**never** Barry \_\_\_\_\_ before, so he was very excited.

2. The children ran over the bridge to see the fire engine, but it was no longer there.

**had** The fire engine \_\_\_\_\_ time the children ran over the bridge.

3. He looked familiar to me, but in fact he was a complete stranger.

**met** Although he looked familiar to me, I \_\_\_\_\_ before.

4. After they had had the contract read by a lawyer, they signed it.

**before** They had the contract read by a lawyer \_\_\_\_\_ it.

5. Staying in a five-star hotel was a new experience for us.

**stayed** We. \_\_\_\_\_ in a five-star hotel before.

6. They arrived at the cinema just in time to see "The End" come up on the screen.

**just** The film \_\_\_\_\_ by the time they arrived at the cinema.

7. He had to write over fifty letters to get an interview.

**had**

He got an interview only after \_\_\_\_\_ over fifty letters.

8. She left the office after turning off all the lights.

**turned**

After \_\_\_\_\_ all the lights, she left the office.

9. When we arrived at the house, Dan had just left.

**soon** Dan left the house and \_\_\_\_\_ after.

10. I checked that I had my passport with me before I left for the airport.

**after** I left for the airport \_\_\_\_\_ that I had my passport with me.

**Упр. 51.** Закончите следующие предложения или добавьте свое, используя глагол в Past Perfect.

Пример: When I arrived home, I was starving. *I hadn't had anything to eat all day.*

1. Tom was furious with Alice because she \_\_\_\_\_.
2. James inherited a small fortune from his father, but a year later he didn't have a penny. \_\_\_\_\_.
3. She was fined \$ 200 because she \_\_\_\_\_.
4. When I saw him, he was pale and shaking like a leaf. \_\_\_\_\_.
5. He was two hours late for the wedding because \_\_\_\_\_.
6. I didn't know her name, but the face was familiar. I was sure \_\_\_\_\_.
7. I couldn't answer any of the exam questions, although \_\_\_\_\_.
8. James was very proud of his eighteen-year-old son, who \_\_\_\_\_.

**Упр. 52.** Выберите требуемый по контексту вариант.

Пример: Everybody knew he *had stolen / had been stealing* from his employer for years.

1. I knew the facts of the case because I *had read/ had been reading* the report.
2. My eyes ached because I *had read/ had been reading* for three hours.
3. The children were filthy. They *had played / had been playing* in the garden, and they were covered in mud.
4. I was very nervous at the beginning of the match. I *had never played/ had never been playing* with her before, and I didn't know how good she was.
5. Donald excelled himself as a cook. He *had cooked/ had been cooking* a wonderful Spanish dish.
6. Donald was very cross. He *had worked/ had been working* in the kitchen all morning, and none had offered to help.

**Упр. 53.** Составьте предложения, используя слова в скобках. Используйте



зуйте следующие глагольные времена: Present Perfect, Present Perfect Coutinuous, Past Perfect, Past Perfect Coutinuous.

Пример: Ann is sitting on the ground. She's out of breath, (she / run) - She *has been running*.

1. Where's my bag? I left it under this chair, (somebody / take / it). 2. We were all surprised when Jenny and Andy got married last year, (they / only / know / each other / a few weeks). 3. It's still raining. I wish it would stop, (it / rain / all day). 4. Suddenly I woke up. I was confused and didn't know where I was (I / dream) . 5. I wasn't hungry at lunchtime so I didn't have anything to eat. (I / have / a big breakfast) 6. Every year Bob and Alice spend a few days at the same hotel by the sea. (they / go / there for years). 7. I've got a headache. (I / have / it / since I got up) 8. Next week Gerry is going to run in a marathon. (he / train / very hard for it)

### **Сравните употребление *Past Simple* и *Past Perfect***

**Упр. 54.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Perfect*.

1. When I (to come) home, mother already (to cook) dinner. 2. When father (to return) from work, we already (to do) our homework. 3. When the teacher (to enter) the classroom, the pupils already (to open) their books. 4. Kate (to give) me the book which she (to buy) the day before. 5. Nick (to show) the teacher the picture which he (to draw). 6. The boy (to give) the goats the grass which he (to bring) from the field. 7. Mother (to see) that Nick (not to wash) his hands. 8. The teacher (to understand) that Lena (not to do) her homework. 9. I (to know) that my friend (not yet to come). 10. Tom (to return) from the cinema at five o'clock. 11. Tom (to return) from the cinema by five o'clock. 12. I (to finish) my homework at seven o'clock. 13. I (to finish) my homework by seven o'clock. 14. He (to think) that he (to lose) the money. 15. Ann (to tell) me that she (to see) an interesting film. 16. When I (to wake) up yesterday, father already (to go) to work. 17. Nick (to think) that his father (not yet to come) home. 18. Mary (to tell) us that she (to cook) a good dinner. 19. Yesterday I (to find) the book which I (to lose) in summer. 20. When we (to come) to the station, the train already (to leave).

**Упр. 55.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple* или *Past Perfect*.

1. He (to study) French before he (to enter) the university. 2. Lanny (to say) that he (to get) his education in Cape Town. 3. The boy (to want) to act the main part in the play because he (to organize) the theatre. 4. Lanny (not to know) who (to attack) him in the darkness. 5. The girl (to be) glad that she (to find) a seat near the window. 6. Suddenly he (to remember) that he (not to ring) her up in the morning. 7. By the time the train (to reach) the city, he (to make) friends with many passengers. 8. When his uncle (to leave), he (to hurry) to the station to book a ticket. 9. She (to think) that Gert and Lanny (to quarrel). 10. By the time we (to come) to see him, he (to return) home. 11. During the holidays my friend (to visit) the village where he (to live) in his childhood. 12. When they (to enter) the hall, the performance already (to begin). 13. When I came home, my mother (to tell) me that she (to receive) a letter from grandfather. 14. Where you (to work) before you (to enter) the institute? 15. By two o'clock the teacher (to examine) all the students. 16. On my way to school I (to remember) that I (to leave) my report at home. 17. All my friends (to be) glad to hear that I (to pass) all the examinations successfully. 18. Poor Oliver (to lie) unconscious on the spot where Sikes (to leave) him. 19. He (to open) his eyes, (to look) around and (to try) to remember what (to happen) to him. 20. All the passengers (to see) at once that the old man (to travel) a great deal in his life.

### Сравните употребление

### *Past Simple, Past Continuous и Past Perfect*

**Упр. 56.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple*, *Past Continuous* и *Past Perfect*.

1. By eight o'clock yesterday I (to do) my homework and at eight I (to play) the piano. 2. By six o'clock father (to come) home and at six he (to have) dinner. 3. By nine o'clock yesterday grandmother (to wash) the dishes and at nine she (to watch) TV. 4. When I (to meet) Tom, he (to eat) an

ice-cream which he (to buy) at the corner of the street. 5. When I (to come) home, my sister (to read) a book which she (to bring) from the library. 6. When mother (to come) home, the children (to eat) the soup which she (to cook) in the morning. 7. When I (to ring) up Mike, he still (to learn) the poem which he (to begin) learning at school. 8. When I (to look) out of the window, the children (to play) with a ball which Pete (to bring) from home. 9. By ten o'clock the children (to settle) comfortably on the sofa and at ten they (to watch) a TV film. 10. When father (to come) home, we (to cook) the mushrooms which we (to gather) in the wood. 11. When I (to see) Ann, she (to sort) the flowers which she (to pick) in the field. 12. When I (to come) home yesterday, I (to see) that my little brother (to break) my pen and (to play) with its pieces. 13. When I (to open) the door of the classroom, I (to see) that the teacher already (to come) and the pupils (to write) a dictation.

**Упр. 57.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в Past Simple, Past Continuous и Past Perfect.

1. When I called at his house, they (to tell) me that he (to leave) an hour before. 2. When I came to the station, I (not to) find my friend there as I (to be) five minutes late and the train (to leave). 3. He (to want) to visit the place where he (to live) in his childhood. 4. The telegram (to come) some minutes after he (to leave). 5. She (to look) very tired as she (to work) hard. 6. I (to return) to the hotel only late at night as I (to lose) my way in the fog. When I (to come) up to my room, I (to see) Pete who (to stand) at the door of the room. He (to wait) for me as he (to lose) his key and could not get in. 7. When I (to wake) up, it (to be) already ten o'clock. I (to call) my brother. Nobody (to answer). He already (to leave). 8. I (to go) up to the open window. The rain (to stop) and the sun (to shine) brightly. The birds in the garden (to sing). The morning (to be) fine. 9. When the rain (to stop) I (to look) out of the window and (to see) John who (to stand) under a tree waiting for me.

**Упр. 58.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple*, *Past Continuous* и *Past Perfect*.

Last night we (to go) to a football match. We (to take) a bus. The bus (to be) full of people as many people (to want) to see the match. We (to get) off the bus and (to go) in the direction of the stadium. While we (to cross) the road, I (to see) Victor. He (to stand) at the corner. He said he (to wait) for his friend who (to come) to St. Petersburg the day before and (to wish) to see the new stadium. A man (to come) up to me and asked if I (to have) a spare ticket for the match. Victor told us that two boys just (to ask) him whether he (to have) a spare ticket. We (to enter) the stadium just as the football players (to come) out on to the field. At the entrance to the stadium we (to meet) Sergei. He (to show) us to our seats and we (to agree) to meet in the refreshment-room during the interval. He (to ask) me if I (to play) football in my childhood.

**Упр. 59.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Past Simple*, *Past Continuous* и *Past Perfect*.

1. I (to sit) in an armchair and (to think) of my coming trip across the North Sea when the door suddenly (to open) and an old friend of mine whom I (not to see) for a very long time (to enter) the room. 2. She (to come) to see us just at the time when we (to have) dinner. It (to be) the first time I (to see) her. 3. I (to see) him just as he (to leave) the hotel. 4. I (not to see) him before we (to meet) at the concert. 5. He (to leave) the house before I (to have) time to ask him anything. 6. He (to tell) me he (to learn) it from the newspaper. 7. He (to enter) the room, (to take) something from the desk and (to go) out. 8. There (to be) two men in the room. One of them (to write) something while the other (to read) a newspaper. 9. He (not to tell) me that he (to receive) a telegram from her. 10. I (to ask) him if he (to know) where she (to live). I (to say) I (not to know) her address. 11. He (to ask) me if I (can) give him your address. 12. She (to say) that he (to give) her the wrong address. 13. I (to ask) him where he (to put) my letter. 14. He (to tell) us that they (to spend) all the money. 15. After spending several days in Paris he (to feel) lonely and (to want) to return home. 16. I (to think) he already (to go) home. 17. I (to find) the old man in the garden. He (to talk) to some children who (to stand) around listening to him. 18. He (to speak) a language we never (to hear) before.

#### 4.6. *Present Perfect Simple* и *Present Perfect Continuous*

При употреблении этих времен следует помнить, что *Present Perfect Continuous* подчеркивает длительность действия, в то время как *Present Perfect Simple* подчеркивает факт совершения действия.

Сравните следующие предложения:

**Я живу** в Санкт-Петербурге. ***I live*** in St. Petersburg.

**Я живу** в Санкт-Петербурге *с детства*. ***I have been living*** in St. Petersburg *since childhood*.

Она делает уроки. ***She is doing*** her homework.

Она делает уроки *с утра*. ***She has been doing*** her homework *since morning*.

**Упр. 60.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы *Present Simple*, *Present Continuous* или *Present Perfect Continuous*.

1. а) Она читает.  
б) Она читает с утра.
2. а) Они играют в волейбол.  
б) Они играют в волейбол с трех часов.
3. а) Мы изучаем английский язык.  
б) Мы изучаем английский язык с 1998 года.
4. а) Мой папа работает в институте.  
б) Мой папа работает в институте с 1995 года.
5. а) Моя бабушка готовит обед.  
б) Моя бабушка готовит обед с двух часов.
6. а) Моя сестра спит.  
б) Моя сестра спит с пяти часов.
7. а) Мама убирает квартиру.  
б) Мама убирает квартиру с утра.
8. а) Дедушка смотрит телевизор.  
б) Дедушка смотрит телевизор с шести часов.
9. а) Мой дядя пишет стихи.  
б) Мой дядя пишет стихи с детства.

Сравните следующие предложения:		
I am <i>still</i> working at my report.	<i>Все еще</i> работаю.	<i>Present Continuous</i>
I have <i>already</i> been working at my report for <i>three hours</i> .	<i>Уже 3 часа</i> работаю.	<i>Present Perfect Continuous</i>

**Упр. 61.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous* или в *Present Perfect Continuous*.

1. а) Они все еще спорят. б) Они спорят уже два часа. 2. а) Она еще спит. б) Она спит уже два часа. 3. а) Он еще делает уроки. б) Он делает уроки уже три часа. 4. а) Мальчики все еще играют в футбол. б) Они играют в футбол уже сорок минут. 5. а) Девочки еще переодеваются. б) Они переодеваются уже полчаса. 6. а) Она все еще изучает испанский язык. б) Она уже два года изучает испанский язык. 7. а) Они все еще живут на даче. б) Они уже четыре месяца живут на даче. 8. а) Она все еще разговаривает по телефону. б) Она разговаривает по телефону уже двадцать минут. 9. а) Мой брат все еще решает эту трудную задачу. б) Он решает эту задачу уже полчаса. 10. а) Она все еще пишет письмо бабушке. б) Она уже целый час пишет это письмо. 11. а) Они все еще ловят рыбу. б) Они ловят рыбу уже пять часов. 12. а) Дедушка и бабушка все еще играют в лото. б) Они играют в лото уже два часа. 13. а) Артисты все еще репетируют эту сцену. б) Они репетируют эту сцену уже три часа. 14. а) Дети все еще бегают во дворе. б) Они уже три часа бегают во дворе. 15. а) Он все еще пишет свою новую книгу. б) Он пишет свою новую книгу уже два года. 16. а) Он все еще учит монолог Гамлета. б) Он учит монолог Гамлета уже два дня. 17. а) Мы все еще ремонтируем нашу квартиру. б) Мы ремонтируем нашу квартиру уже полмесяца.

**Упр.62.** Выберите правильную глагольную форму в каждой паре

предложений.

- a. 1. I've cut my finger!  
2. I've been cutting my finger!
- b. 1. Have you heard Paul Simon's latest record?  
2. Have you been hearing Paul Simon's latest record?
- c. 1. She's tired because she's shopped all day.  
2. She's tired because she's been shopping all day.
- d. 1. Sorry. I've broken one of your glasses.  
2. Sorry. I've been breaking one of your glasses.
- e. 1. How long have you had this book?  
2. How long have you been having this book?
- f. 1. They have lived here for three years.  
2. They've been living here for three years.

**Упр. 63.** Соедините строчки из столбца А с соответствующей строчкой из столбца В.

A	B
a. Ann's been sunbathing.	1. She's furious.
b. She's been shopping.	2. She's got paint in her hair
c. She's been working in the garden.	3. She's crying.
d. She's been reading for hours.	4. Her back hurts.
e. She's been watching a sad film.	5. She hasn't got any money left.
f. She's been waiting for hours.	6. She's a bit burnt.
g. She's been doing the housework.	7. She's soaking wet.
h. She's been decorating the bathroom,	8. The house smells of onions and garlic.
i. She's been cooking,	9. Her eyes hurt.
j. She's been bathing the children.	10. Everything's spotless.

**Упр.64.** Употребите глагол в скобках в нужном по контексту времени (Present Perfect или Present Perfect Continuons.)

1. I'm exhausted. I \_\_\_\_\_ (work) all day, and I \_\_\_\_\_ (not finish) yet.  
2. I \_\_\_\_\_ (visit) many countries in the last five years.

3. Someone\_\_\_\_\_ (take) my books. I\_\_\_\_\_ (look) for them for ages, but can't find them anywhere.
4. I\_\_\_\_\_ (shop) all morning, but I\_\_\_\_\_ (not buy) anything yet. I haven't seen anything I've liked.
5. The best book I\_\_\_\_\_ ever\_\_\_\_\_ (read) is One Hundred Years of Solitude by Gabriel Marquez.
6. A You're filthy! What\_\_\_\_\_ you\_\_\_\_\_ (do)?  
B I\_\_\_\_\_ (work) in the garden. I\_\_\_\_\_ (plant) all the vegetables for next year.
7. I \_\_\_\_\_ (wait) for two hours, but nobody\_\_\_\_\_ (arrive) yet.

**Упр.65.** Задайте вопрос с How long...? для следующих предложений и решите, какое время нужно использовать, Present Perfect или Present Perfect Continuous. Если оба времени возможны, используйте Continuous.

1. I live in the country.      How long\_\_\_\_\_?
2. I play a lot of tennis.      How long\_\_\_\_\_?
3. I know Jack well.      How long\_\_\_\_\_?
4. I work in Italy.      How long \_\_\_\_\_?
5. I have an American car.      How long\_\_\_\_\_?

**упр. 66.** Для каждого из пяти предложений из предыдущего задания задайте вопрос в Past Simple , используя подсказки.

1. When\_\_\_\_\_ move\_\_\_\_\_?
2. How old\_\_\_\_\_ when\_\_\_\_\_ started\_\_\_\_\_?
3. Where\_\_\_\_\_ meet\_\_\_\_\_?
4. Why\_\_\_\_\_ decide\_\_\_\_\_?
5. How much\_\_\_\_\_ pay\_\_\_\_\_?

**Упр.67.** Поставьте глагол в требуемом по контексту времени (Present Simple, Present Continuous, Present Perfect Simple или Present Perfect Continuous).

Пример: I *have been learning* (learn) Italian for the past three years, but there's still a lot I *don't understand* (not understand).



1. A Oh dear! Look out of the window. It \_\_\_\_\_ (rain).  
B Oh no. I \_\_\_\_\_ (not bring) my umbrella.
1. My uncle \_\_\_\_\_ (know) everything about roses.  
He \_\_\_\_\_ (grow) them for 35 years. Now he \_\_\_\_\_ (try) to produce a blue one.
2. I \_\_\_\_\_ (listen) to you for the past half an hour, but I'm afraid I \_\_\_\_\_ (not understand) a word.
4. A What's the matter, Jane?  
B I \_\_\_\_\_ (read) in my room and the light isn't very good.  
I \_\_\_\_\_ (have) a headache. It's really hurting.
5. A What are you doing?  
B I \_\_\_\_\_ (write) a letter.
6. A You \_\_\_\_\_ (sit) at the desk for hours. Is it a difficult letter?  
B Yes. I \_\_\_\_\_ (decide) to resign from my job.
7. A But how do you know you don't like it?  
You \_\_\_\_\_ only \_\_\_\_\_ (do) it for a week.  
B I do like it. But I \_\_\_\_\_ (offer-passive) a better one, and I'm going to accept it. It's in Brazil, and I \_\_\_\_\_ always \_\_\_\_\_ (want) to go to Brazil. I \_\_\_\_\_ (not like) living in cold climates.
8. A But how \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ (know) if you'll like it there?  
You \_\_\_\_\_ never (be) out of England before.  
B That doesn't matter. Some friends of mine \_\_\_\_\_ (live) there at the moment. They'll look after me.
9. A You're very lucky, really. I \_\_\_\_\_ (try) to find a job for months. I \_\_\_\_\_ (be) to endless interviews, and I \_\_\_\_\_ (turn down-passive) each time, but you got two jobs in a week.  
B Well, obviously you \_\_\_\_\_ (apply) for the wrong kinds of job. Don't worry. You'll find one soon.
- A. I \_\_\_\_\_ (hope) so.

**Упр. 68.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в одном из следующих времен: *Present Simple*, *Present Continuous*, *Present Perfect*, *Present Perfect Continuous*.

1. He (to run) now. He (to run) for ten minutes without any rest. 2. What

they (to do) now? — They (to work) in the reading-room. They (to work) there for already three hours. 3. Where he (to be) now? — He (to be) in the garden. He (to play) volley-ball with his friends. They (to play) since breakfast time. 4. I (to live) in St. Petersburg. I (to live) in St. Petersburg since 1990. 5. She already (to do) her homework for two hours; but she (not yet to do) half of it. 6. I (to wait) for you since two o'clock. 7. What you (to do)? — I (to read). I (to read) for already two hours. I already (to read) sixty pages. 8. This man (to be) a writer. He (to write) books. He (to write) books since he was a young man. He already (to write) eight books. 9. What you (to do) here since morning? 10. Lena is a very good girl. She always (to help) her mother about the house. Today she (to help) her mother since morning. They already (to wash) the floor and (to dust) the furniture. Now they (to cook) dinner together. 11. This is the factory where my father (to work). He (to work) here for fifteen years. 12. You (to find) your note-book? — No! I still (to look) for it. I already (to look) for it for two hours, but (not yet to find) it. 13. You (to play) with a ball for already three hours. Go home and do your homework. 14. Wake up! You (to sleep) for ten hours already. 15. I (to wait) for a letter from my cousin for a month already, but (not yet to receive) it. 15. It is difficult for me to speak about this opera as I (not to hear) it. 16. I just (to receive) a letter from my granny, but I (not yet to receive) any letters from my parents. 17. The weather (to be) fine today. The sun (to shine) ever since we got up. 18. Every day I (to wind) up my watch at 10 o'clock in the evening. 19. Come along, Henry, what you (to do) now? I (to wait) for you a long time. 20. Where your gloves (to be)? — I (to put) them into my pocket.

**Упр. 69.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в *Present Simple*, *Present Continuous*, *Present Perfect*, или *Present Perfect Continuous*.

1. Я уже три дня об этом думаю. 2. Моя сестра пьет кофе с молоком. А я всегда предпочитал черный кофе. 3. Мы очень рады вас видеть. Мы вас ждали целый месяц. 4. Вы все еще читаете эту книгу? Сколько времени вы ее уже читаете? 5. Моя сестра занимается музыкой уже пять лет. 6. Я ищу тебя весь вечер. Где ты был все это время? 7. Они

пишут сочинение уже два часа. 8. Мы знаем друг друга уже четыре года. 9. Я всегда хотел изучать английский язык. 10. Где Нина? — Она уже "два часа дома. 11. Где дети? — Они все еще играют во дворе. 12. Мой брат уже три года инженер. 13. Мой друг знает английский с детства. 14. Я уже полчаса наблюдаю за тобой. 15. Ваш брат еще болен? — Нет, он уже поправился. Он уже три дня занимается физикой. Он хочет получить отличную оценку на экзамене. 16. Мне уже давно хочется прочесть эту книгу. 17. Я уже двадцать минут пытаюсь найти мою старую тетрадь. 18. Они уже десять лет живут в Нью Йорке. 19. Моя тетя — артистка. Она всегда любила театр. 20. Ваш папа уже вернулся с севера? — Да, он уже две недели дома.

#### 4.7. *Used to* и *would* для выражения повторяющегося действия или обычного состояния в прошлом

*Used to* используется, чтобы выразить обычные, повторяющиеся прошедшие действия и состояния, которые продолжались в течение некоторого периода времени в прошлом, но в настоящее время уже не происходят.

Примеры: *Last winter I used to spend a lot of time in the library*, (повторяющееся действие) *He used to be very short-tempered* (состояние)

*Would* употребляется со всеми лицами единственного и множественного числа для выражения повторного действия в прошлом в значении *бывало*. при этом употребление *would* не подчеркивает, что в настоящее время Действие уже не происходит. *Would* нельзя использовать, чтобы передать прошлые состояния. (Неправильно сказать: *He'd live in a lovely cottage*). Если действие в прошлом совершилось лишь раз, и, следовательно, не является привычкой, нужно использовать Past Simple.

**Упр.70.** Соедините строчки из колонки А и В. Закончите предложение в Колонке В подлежащим с *used to*.

Пример: d-1, *It used to follow me everywhere*

А	В
---	---

a. I was very fit when I was young.	1. _____ follow me everywhere.
b. The teachers at my school were horrible.	2. _____ go everywhere by bus.
c. My sister's room was so messy.	3. _____ freeze on winter morning
d. I had a dog when I was a kid.	4. _____ fly Concord.
e. My family had some lovely holidays.	5. _____ never _____ tidy it at all.
f. When I was young we didn't have a car.	6. _____ do a lot of exercises.
g. And we didn't have central heating.	7. _____ hit the pupils.
h. My uncle was a pilot for British Airways.	8. _____ go camping all over Europe.

**Упр.71.** Составьте предложения с *used to*. Обратите внимание на образование отрицательной конструкции *didn't use to*.

Пример; This town's so ugly. It used to be so pretty.

There are so many tourists. There didn't use to be any tourists.

1. The houses are very expensive.
2. The streets are dirty.
3. There is so much litter on the streets.
4. The car parks are always full.
5. There is a lot of traffic on the roads.
6. It's noisy at night.
7. Andy's changed! He's so miserable!
8. And he's really mean.
9. He's badly-dressed.

**Упр.72.** Составьте краткие ответы с *never used to*, и скажите, что на самом деле имело место в прошлом.

Пример: Jeremy drinks beer and whisky, (lemonade) *He never used to. He used to drink lemonade.*

1. Henry drives like a maniac. (carefully)
2. Tessa spends a fortune on clothes! (very careful with her money)
3. The children fight a lot these days, (get on well)
4. I think Kate tells lies, (tell the truth)
5. Margaret gets up at 11.00. (the first one up in the morning)
6. The tape recorder keeps stopping, (work perfectly)

**Упр. 73.** Употребите глагол а скобках в нужном по контексту времени (Past Continuous или *used to...*).

примеры: I haven't been to the cinema for ages now. (go) *We used to go a lot.*

1. I \_\_\_\_\_ a lot but I don't use my car very much these days. (drive) 2. I asked the driver to slow down. She \_\_\_\_\_ too fast. (drive) 3. Rose and Jim met for the first time when they \_\_\_\_\_ at university, (study) 4. When I was a child, I \_\_\_\_\_ a lot of bad dreams. (have) 5. When the phone rang, I \_\_\_\_\_ a shower. (have) 6. "Where were you yesterday afternoon?" "I \_\_\_\_\_ volleyball." (play) 7. "Do you do any sports?" "Not these days. I \_\_\_\_\_ volleyball." (play) 8. George looked very nice. He \_\_\_\_\_ a very nice suit. (wear)

**Упр. 74.** Заполните пропуски требуемой по контексту формой *used to*: утвердительной, вопросительной или отрицательной.

1. There \_\_\_\_\_ be a beautiful old building where that car park is now. 2. \_\_\_\_\_ have a Saturday job when you were at school? 3. She \_\_\_\_\_ be so moody. It's only since she lost her job. 4. \_\_\_\_\_ play cricket when you were at school? 5. My grandfather never \_\_\_\_\_ get so out of breath when he climbed the stairs. 6. Julie \_\_\_\_\_ be as slim as she is now. She's been dieting. 7. Where \_\_\_\_\_ go out to eat when you lived in Madrid? 8. \_\_\_\_\_ smoke 60 cigarettes a day? How did you give up?

**Упр. 78.** Выберите вариант ответа, который вы считаете правильным. Иногда правильными могут быть несколько вариантов.

1. We \_\_\_\_\_ Auntie Jean ever)' time we went to London.

A visited                      B used to visit                      C would visit

2. I \_\_\_\_\_ long blonde hair when I was first married.

A had                      B used to have                      C would have

3. Pam \_\_\_\_\_ out with Andy for six months but then she ditched him.

A went                      B used to go                      C would go

4. We \_\_\_\_\_ coffee and croissants every morning for breakfast

A had                      B used to have                      C would have

5. We \_\_\_\_\_ to each other every day when we apart.

A wrote                      B used to write                      C would write

6. He \_\_\_\_\_ to me for 25 years and then stopped.

A wrote                      B used to write                      C would write

7. In the old days people \_\_\_\_\_ you if you were in trouble.

A helped                      B used to help                      C would help

1. I \_\_\_\_\_ living so close to the sea.

A loved                      B used to love                      C would love

2. Dave \_\_\_\_\_ Molly three times if she wanted to go out with him.

A asked                      B used to ask                      C would ask

10. I \_\_\_\_\_ questions in class. I was too shy.

A never asked                      B never used to ask                      C would never ask

#### **4.8. Способы выражения будущего времени**

Действия в будущем времени могут быть выражены с помощью:

- вспомогательных глаголов shall и will:

I'll come/' he said, (решение, принятое в момент разговора);

He'll win, I'm sure, (предсказание);

- с использованием формы to be going to:

We are going to play tennis, (намерение);

- времени Present Continuous:

She's meeting her publisher, (запланированное действие);

- времени Present Indefinite:

My flight leaves at 10:00. (будущее действие, происходящее по расписанию).

**Упр.79.** Используйте will или be going to. Иногда возможны оба варианта

1. Look out! We \_\_\_\_\_ crash! 2. "There's the doorbell." "I \_\_\_\_\_ go." 3. We promise that if you vote for us we \_\_\_\_\_ double your income in twelve months. 4. "It's very cloudy, isn't it?" "Yes, I think it \_\_\_\_\_ rain." 5. The next train to arrive at platform six \_\_\_\_\_ be the delayed 7.32 service for Bristol. 6. I wonder what she \_\_\_\_\_ do next. 7. "Can somebody answer the phone?" "I \_\_\_\_\_." 8. A Poor Sue went to hospital yesterday. B I'm sorry to hear that. I \_\_\_\_\_ send some flowers. 9. A This room's very cold. B You're right. I \_\_\_\_\_ turn on the heater. 10. A Oh dear. I can't do this homework. B Don't worry. I \_\_\_\_\_ help you. 11. It's John's birthday tomorrow. B Is it? I can't afford a present but I \_\_\_\_\_ buy him a card. 12. A How old are you? B I'm 64. I \_\_\_\_\_ retire next year. 13. A. Why are you leaving so early? B Because the teacher gave us a lot of homework and I \_\_\_\_\_ do it very carefully.

**Упр. 80.** Закончите следующие предложения, используя will или be going to и любые другие необходимые слова. Иногда возможны оба варианта.

1. A I've got to phone a Paris number. Do you know the code?  
B No, \_\_\_\_\_ in the directory for you.  
2. A What are you doing over the Easter holidays?  
B Absolutely nothing. We \_\_\_\_\_ rest.  
3. A Did you hear the weather forecast?  
B Yes. \_\_\_\_\_ cold at first, then \_\_\_\_\_ a little warmer this afternoon, and this evening \_\_\_\_\_ some light showers.  
4. A Why did you buy a house in such terrible condition?  
B It was cheap. We \_\_\_\_\_ modernize it from top to bottom, and we \_\_\_\_\_ into a restaurant. What do you think?

5. A If you are elected, what \_\_\_\_\_ your party \_\_\_\_\_ about unemployment?

B We have carefully considered this issue. When we are elected, as we most certainly \_\_\_\_\_ be, we \_\_\_\_\_ create half a million new jobs.

6. A What are you doing here? Annie's expecting you for lunch.

B I completely forgot! I \_\_\_\_\_ a ring, and tell her I \_\_\_\_\_ be late. Thanks for reminding me.

7. A How will the proposed tax increase on petrol affect your business?

B To be perfectly honest, we haven't thought about it yet. We \_\_\_\_\_ cross that bridge when we get to it.

**Упр. 81.** Употребите глаголы в скобках в нужной по контексту форме будущего времени.

Пример: Hurry up! The plane arrives (arrive) at 7.30.

1. There's no point in running now. We \_\_\_\_\_ (miss) the bus anyway.

2. Yes, I'll come out this evening. I \_\_\_\_\_ (not/work). 3. You can relax.

The match \_\_\_\_\_ (not/start) until four o'clock. 4. I \_\_\_\_\_ (go) to

the market this afternoon. Do you want anything? 5. Are you OK, Donna?

You look like you \_\_\_\_\_ (faint). 6. You realise that the boss

\_\_\_\_\_ (not/like) this, don't you? 7. I \_\_\_\_\_ (cook) dinner this

evening-as usual. 8. She \_\_\_\_\_ (look) for a new flat next year. 9.

Don't worry. The shops \_\_\_\_\_ (not close) until eight o'clock tonight.

**Упр. 82.** Закончите второе предложение так, чтобы его значение было подобно значению первого предложения. Используйте выделенное слово и от двух до пяти других необходимых слов.

1. Simon intends to join the police force when he leaves school.

**is** When Simon leaves school \_\_\_\_\_ the police force.

2. He is such a bad driver that he is almost certain to have an accident soon.

**going** I think \_\_\_\_\_ an accident soon because he is such a bad driver.

3. The departure time for the train is 8.35.

**at** The train \_\_\_\_\_ 8.35.

4. I have arranged to meet my bank manager in the near future.



**am** I \_\_\_\_\_ soon.

5. They say that if the cows are lying down, rain will soon follow.

**is** They say that if the cows are lying down, it means that \_\_\_\_\_ rain.

6. What do you intend to do with all that money?

**are** What \_\_\_\_\_ with all that money?

7. He has decided never to drink whisky again.

**is** He \_\_\_\_\_ whisky again.

8. We have not arranged to do anything in particular this weekend.

**are** We \_\_\_\_\_ anything in particular this weekend.

9. I do not intend to help him, even if he pays me.

**am** Even if he pays me, I \_\_\_\_\_ him.

10. The film is scheduled to begin at four o'clock.

**not** The film \_\_\_\_\_ until four o'clock.

**Упр. 83.** Употребите глагол в скобках в требуемой по контексту форме будущего времени (*I am doing, I do, I'm going to do, will, won't, will (shall) be doing*).

1. I feel a bit hungry. I think \_\_\_\_\_ (I/have) something to eat. 2. Why are you putting on your coat? \_\_\_\_\_ (you/go) somewhere? 3. What time \_\_\_\_\_ (I/phone) you this evening? About 7.30? 4. Look! That plane is flying towards the airport. \_\_\_\_\_ (it/land). 5. We must do something soon, before \_\_\_\_\_ (it/be) too late. 6. I'm sorry you've decided to leave the company. \_\_\_\_\_ (I/miss) you when \_\_\_\_\_. (you/go). 7. \_\_\_\_\_ (I/give) you my address? If \_\_\_\_\_ (I/give) you my address, \_\_\_\_\_ (you/write) to me? 8. Are you still watching that programme? What time \_\_\_\_\_ (it/end)? 9. \_\_\_\_\_ (I / go) to London next weekend for a wedding. My sister \_\_\_\_\_ (get) married. 10. I'm not ready yet. \_\_\_\_\_ (I/tell) you when \_\_\_\_\_ (I / be) ready. I promise \_\_\_\_\_ (I / not / be) very long. 11. A Where are you going? B To the hairdresser's. \_\_\_\_\_ (I / have) my hair cut. 12. She was very rude to me. I refuse to speak to her again until \_\_\_\_\_ (she / apologise). 13. I wonder where \_\_\_\_\_ (we/live) ten years from now. 14. What do you plan to do when \_\_\_\_\_ (you / finish) your course at college?

**Упр. 84.** Употребите глаголы в скобках в нужном по контексту времени Present Indefinite или Present Perfect.

Пример: When you have read (read) my book, could you give it back to me? Of course. As soon as I've finished (finish) it, I'll give it to you.

1. I \_\_\_\_\_ (not be) in touch unless there \_\_\_\_\_ (be) something urgent to tell you. 2. The children \_\_\_\_\_ (not go) to bed until they \_\_\_\_\_ (have) a glass of milk. 3. You \_\_\_\_\_ (phone) me before you \_\_\_\_\_ (go) away, won't you? 4. A When \_\_\_\_\_ you (go) to the pub? B When I \_\_\_\_\_ (finish) this work. It \_\_\_\_\_ (take) about another hour. 5. If you \_\_\_\_\_ (not hurry up), we \_\_\_\_\_ (be) late. 6. I \_\_\_\_\_ (come) to London as soon as you \_\_\_\_\_ (find) somewhere for us to live. 7. I'm sure you \_\_\_\_\_ (feel) a lot better after you \_\_\_\_\_ (take) your medicine. 8. We \_\_\_\_\_ (have dinner) as soon as all the guests \_\_\_\_\_ (arrive). 9. You \_\_\_\_\_ (not forget) to lock the door if you \_\_\_\_\_ (go) out, will you?

**Упр. 85.** Употребите глаголы в скобках в нужном по контексту времени Future Simple, Future Perfect, Present Simple или Present Perfect.

1. When we (pass) our exam we'll have a holiday. 2. When I (finish) the book I'll lend it to you. 3. After I (be) here for a year I'll ask for a rise. 4. Don't drive at more than 50 k.p.h. till your car (do) 4,000 kilometres. 5. When you (do) 4,000 kilometres you can drive it at 70 k.p.h. 6. When we (see) the cathedral we'll go to the museum. 7. He (not let) you out till you have finished your homework. 8. Hotel receptionist: When you (sign) the hotel register the porter will show you your room. 9. By the end of the month 5,000 people (see) this exhibition. 10. By next April I (pay) \$3,000 in income tax. 11. I suppose that when I come back in ten years time all these old houses (be) pulled down. 12. The strike leader said, "By midnight 500 men (come) out on strike." 13. At your present rate you (burn) all that coal by the end of the month. 14. The treasurer said, "By the end of the year all our debts (be paid) off."

## Сравните употребление *Present Continuous*, *Present Simple* и *Future Simple*

**Упр. 86.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous*, *Present Simple* или в *Future Simple*.

1. I (to play) chess tomorrow. 2. I (not to play) chess tomorrow. 3. You (to play) chess tomorrow? 4. He (to play) chess every day. 5. He (not to play) chess every day. 6. He (to play) chess every day? 7. They (to play) chess now. 8. They (not to play) chess now. 9. They (to play) chess now? 10. Nick (to go) to the park now. 11. Nick (to go) to school every day. 12. Nick (to go) to school tomorrow. 13. You (to come) to my place next Sunday? 14. You (to read) this book next week? 15. You (to read) books every day? 16. You (to read) a book now? 17. I (not to see) him tomorrow. 18. What you (to do) tomorrow? 19. What your friend (to do) tomorrow? 20. Where you (to go) next summer? 21. Where you (to go) every morning? 22. Where you (to go) now? 23. Look! Mary (to dance). 24. She (to dance) every day. 25. She (to dance) tomorrow?

**Упр. 87.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous*, *Present Simple* или в *Future Simple*.

1. He (to go) to the theatre tomorrow. 2. We (to go) to school in the morning. 3. Look! Kate (to go) to school. 4. You (to help) your mother tomorrow? 5. I (not to play) the guitar now. 6. My brother (to play) the guitar every evening. 7. They (not to take) care of the garden next summer. 8. You (to like) apples? 9. You (to eat) apples tomorrow? 10. Nick (to read) many books. 11. Mother (to work) every day. 12. He (not to sleep) now. 13. Your brother (to go) to the exhibition next Sunday? 14. We (not to go) to the zoo tomorrow. 15. I (not to learn) the poem now. 16. She (to live) in San Francisco. 17. My father (to shoot) very well. 18. He is very strong. Look! He (to carry) a very heavy box. 19. My sister (not to like) coffee. 20. When you (to go) to bed every day? 21. What he (to read) now? 22. What he (to read) every day? 23. What he (to read) tomorrow? 24. Where she (to go) tomorrow? 25. You (to give) me this book tomorrow?

**Упр. 88.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Present Continuous*, *Present Simple* или в *Future Simple*.

1. When you (to get) up every day? - - I (to get) up at seven o'clock. 2. My brother usually (not to get) up at seven o'clock. As a rule, he (to get) up at six o'clock, but tomorrow he (to get) up at seven o'clock. 3. Why she (to come) home so late tomorrow? 4. We (to go) to the country the day after tomorrow. 5. Our friends always (to go) to the country for the week-end. 6. Look! The kitten (to play) with its tail. 7. Your parents (to watch) TV now? 8. My sister (not to rest) now. She (to help) mother in the kitchen. She (to help) mother in the kitchen every day. 9. Where she (to go) tomorrow? 10. She (to go) to the country with us tomorrow? 11. They (to stay) at home tomorrow. 12. What you (to do) now? I (to see) that you (not to read). 13. When you (to finish) your homework? It (to be) very late, it (to be) time to go to bed. 14. How you usually (to spend) evenings? 15. What you (to do) in the country next summer? 16. They (not to drink) tea now. I (to think) they (to watch) TV. 17. What your father (to drink) in the evening?

**Сравните употребление трех будущих времен:**  
**(*Future Simple*, *Future Continuous*,  
*Future Perfect*)**

**Упр. 89.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в одном из будущих времен: *Future Simple*, *Future Continuous* или *Future Perfect*.

1. I (to do) my homework tomorrow. 2. I (to do) my homework at six o'clock tomorrow. 3. I (to do) my homework by six o'clock tomorrow. 4. When I come home tomorrow, my family (to have) supper. 5. When you come to my place tomorrow, I (to read) your book. I (to do) my homework by the time you come. 6. Don't come to my place tomorrow. I (to write) a composition the whole evening. 7. I (not to go) to the cinema tomorrow. I (to watch) TV the whole evening. 8. What you (to do) tomorrow? 9. What you (to do) at eight o'clock tomorrow? 10. You (to play) volley-ball tomorrow? 11. You (to do) this work by next Sunday? 12. When you (to go) to see your friend next time? 13. How many pages you (to read) by five o'clock tomorrow? 14. Tomorrow I (to begin) doing my homework as soon as I come from school. I (to do) my homework from three till six. My fa-

ther (to come) home at seven o'clock tomorrow. I (to do) all my homework by the time he comes, and we (to go) for a walk together.

### Упражнения на все 16 времен действительного залога

**Упр. 90.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. Where is your luggage? — I (to leave) it at the station. I (to take) it tomorrow when Nick (to come) to help me. 2. I (to read) about an hour when he (to come). 3. The play (not yet to begin) and the people (to talk) in the hall. 4. Yesterday I (to buy) a new pair of gloves, as I (to lose) the old ones. 5. We (to walk) in silence. He already (to tell) me all that (to be) interesting about himself, and I (to have) nothing to tell him. 6. The moon (not to rise) yet, and only two stars, like two distant lighthouses, (to shine) in the dark blue sky. 7. One night a little swallow (to fly) over the city. His friends (to fly) away to Egypt six weeks before, but he (to stay) behind. 8. What you (to do) these three months? 9. Our train starts late in the evening, so if you (to come) at seven o'clock, we still (to pack) our luggage. 10. When you (to see) him last? 11. I (to meet) him when he (to walk) across the park. 12. You ever (to act) on the stage? — Why, yes, that's what I (to do) for the last six years. 13. Don't enter the bedroom! The child (to sleep) there, and he always (to wake) up when somebody (to open) the door.

**Упр. 91.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. What you (to do) when I (to come) in? 2. When I (to come) to his house, they (to tell) me that he (to leave) an hour before. 3. On checking up his answers he (to find) out that he (to make) several mistakes. 4. When I (to leave) home, the snow already (to stop), but a strong wind (to blow). 5. You (to read) this book? — Yes, I (to read) it. I (to think) it (to be) very interesting. 6. What the children (to do) now? — Oh, they (to play) the new table game which I (to buy) for them the day before yesterday. 7. They (to reach) the corner of the street by now and (to stand) at the bus stop. 8. After we (to walk) about two hours, we arrived at a picturesque glade cov-

ered with fresh grass. 9. We could not go out because it (to rain) hard since early morning. 10. She (to teach) at our school for twenty years now. 11. Ring me up as soon as you (to come) home. 12. He (to begin) to write his composition at three o'clock. It is already eleven, and he still (to write) it. He says he (to finish) it by twelve. 13. We (to help) our librarian to put the books in the right order for already three days, but we (to arrange) only half the books.

**Упр. 92.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. The first person whom Andrew (to see) as he (to enter) was his old nurse. She (to sit) on the sofa. During the last five years she greatly (to change) and now (to look) a very old woman. 2. She is going to read the letter she just (to receive). 5. How long you (to wait) for me? I am really very sorry. 4. Yesterday I (to meet) a friend of mine whom I (not to see) for a long time. 5. Ring me up at eleven o'clock, I (not yet to sleep). 6. You (to be) late for the concert if you (not to take) a taxi. 7. The sun (to set) a long time ago, and it (to begin) to get really cold. 8. When I (to come) home yesterday, my sister already (to return) and (to sit) at the fireplace looking through some old photographs. 9. He (to smoke) three cigarettes and (to look) through all the books on the shelf, when at last he (to hear) his friend's steps approaching the door. 10. He just (to approach) the door, when she (to enter). 11. He (to write) the composition for three hours and he (to say) he soon (to finish) it as he (to think) over the conclusion now. 12. Hardly<sup>1</sup> I (to go) out when I (to remember) that I (to forget) to take my umbrella. 13. Where is the baby? — The nurse (to put) it to bed. 14. He said he (to work) for a long time without achieving good results.

**Упр. 93.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. When I (to come) to Pete's house last Sunday, he (to read) a new book. He (to say) he (to give) it to me soon. Today I (to take) it from him. Now I (to read) it. I (to finish) it by Friday. If you like, I (to give) it to you on Saturday when you (to come) to see me. 2. When will he come? We (to

wait) for him for already half an hour. 3. On leaving the hall the students (to thank) the professor who (to deliver) the lecture. 4. We already (to cover) about ten miles when Peter, who (to look) out of the window for the last five or ten minutes, suddenly exclaimed: "Here is the station!" 5. When morning came, the storm already (to stop), but the snow still (to fall). 6. Yesterday by eight o'clock he (to finish) all his homework, and when I (to come) to his place at nine, he (to read). 7. I (to wait) for permission to go abroad for already three weeks, but I (not to receive) the visa yet. 8. Everybody (to be) at the door of the museum, but my friend (not yet to come). 9. We (to drink) tea when the telephone (to ring). 10. Johnny noticed that everybody (to look) at him, and he (to feel) shy. 11. Light (to travel) more quickly than sound.

**Упр. 94.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. Peter (to read) by the fireplace when the door (to open) and the maid (to enter). The cook (to follow) her. 2. When the mother (to satisfy) herself that the children (to sleep) peacefully in their beds, she (to take) out the Christmas presents and carefully (to put) them into the stockings which (to hang) at the beds. 3. If you (to ring) me up tomorrow, I (to tell) you all about it. 4. The lesson (not yet to begin), and the children (to talk) loudly in the corridor. 5. I (to live) in St. Petersburg since 1991. 6. By the fifteenth of January the students (to pass) all the examinations. 7. The students (to write) the paper by dinner-time. 8. They (to sail) down the river for many hours before they (to come) to the village. 9. I (not to be) to my home town for five years. 10. The rain (to stop) by the time we (to reach) home. 11. The message (to arrive) five minutes after he (to leave) the house. 12. It (to be) nearly eleven o'clock when we (to begin) doing this work. 13. At last the reply from my grandmother (to come), and my mother (to tell) me that she (to come) soon. 14. Here you (to be) at last! I (to wait) for you for twenty minutes. You (not to be) ashamed?

**Упр. 95.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. The day (to be) cold and it (to rain). When I (to reach) home, my rain-coat (to be) all wet. *I* (to take) it off, (to shake) the water off it, (to hang) it up and (to go) into the living-room. My children (to play) on the carpet. When they (to see) me, they (to jump) up and (to run) up to me. 2. I (to hear) this song several times already, but *I* cannot remember the words. I (to write) them down as soon as I (to hear) this song again. 3. Hardly<sup>1</sup> he (to open) the suit-case, when he (to find) the tie which he (to think) he (to lose) long before. 4. Shut the door! The room (to be) full of smells which (to come) from the kitchen. Mother (not to like) kitchen smells in the room. 5. Last night he (to finish) the book which he (to begin) writing a year ago. 6. He said he (to listen) to the same stories for a long time. 7. By the evening he (to translate) ten pages. 8. You ever (to be) to the new stadium? — Yes, I (to be) there last Saturday. 9. The old lady was happy: she (not to see) her son for three years. 10. What you (to do) yesterday? 11. How many pages you (to translate) for today?

**Упр. 96.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. You always (to spend) summer at the sea side? — Yes, as a rule. Last summer I (to go) to the mountains, but I (not to find) the rest there as pleasant as near the sea. 2. When they returned, they (to tell) us many interesting things which they (to see) during their journey. 3. When I (to leave) home, it (to rain). 4. By the end of the year he read) about two hundred pages. 5. We were happy when the sun (to rise), for the night (to be) very cold. 6. Where you (to put) my dictionary? I cannot find it anywhere. 7. I (not yet to fall) asleep when the telephone (to ring). 8. What you (to do) from six till nine yesterday? 9. The children (to play) here at eleven o'clock, but now they (to go) home. 10. Go to see your old grandfather as soon as you (to arrive) in Novgorod. 11. At last the librarian (to give) me the book which I (to wait) for during two months. I was very glad. I (to go) home and (to begin) reading it at once. 12. Don't speak to him: he (to be) very busy, he (to do) some very urgent work, 13. I did not want him to go there: I (to be) afraid that something (to happen). 14. I did not notice that my watch (to stop), and when I (to arrive) at the station, my train (to leave)



and I (to have) to ask when the next train (to come). 15. He (to wait) for fifteen minutes when at last he (to see) her at the end of the platform.

**Упр. 97.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. What you (to do) here? — I (to prepare) for my report. — How long you (to prepare) for it? — Oh, I (to work) since morning. 2. He (to teach) at school for five years when the war (to break) out. 3. She (to study) English since last year. 4. What you (to read)? — I (to read) a magazine. — How long you (to read) it? — I (to read) it for half an hour. 5. She (to live) in Moscow for ten years when her sister (to come) to live with her. 6. Our teacher (to come). Now he (to speak) with our monitor. 7. They (to speak) when I (to look) at them. 8. I (to walk) about an hour when I (to see) a little house not far from the river. 9. When he (to read) the newspaper, he (to give) it to his brother. 10. He (to leave) for Rostov in 1990 and since then he (to live) there. 11. At this time tomorrow we (to discuss) your report. 12. Now she (to read) the book which I (to give) her yesterday. 13. You ever (to be) to London? — Yes, I (to be) there last summer. 14. What your friend (to do) now? — She (to have) dinner. She usually (to have) dinner at this time. 15. I (to buy) a new dress. I (to show) it to you tomorrow when you (to come) to my place. 16. So you begin working tomorrow! And who (to take) care of your children when you (to go) to work? 17. Hello, Peter! Where you (to go)? — I (to go) to the library.

**Упр. 98.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. On entering the drawing-room he (to find) that his two friends (to get) up and (to wait) for him. 2. The sportsmen (to train) since early morning; now they (to go) over the high jump, as they (not to be) satisfied with their results. 3. Five minutes (not to pass) when the train for which we (to wait) (to appear) in the distance. 4. Tomorrow father (to come) late. We (to do) all our homework and (to drink) tea when he (to come). 5. When Mrs. Smith (to come) home yesterday, she (to see) that her daughter (to cook) supper and (to wait) for her with the table laid. 6. Where is Nick? — He

(not to be) at home, he (to go) to the cinema. Wait for him, he (to come) in half an hour. 7. It was very late. I (to go) to bed and (to fall) asleep when my father (to return) home. 8. I'll join you when I (to drink) my tea. 9. When I (to come), he (to live) in the same old house where I first (to meet) him. He (to tell) me he (to wait) for me for already some time. 10. The pupils (to do) a lot of exercises before they (to learn) to write dictations well. 11. I could not hear a sound: they (to stop) talking.

**Упр. 99.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. When we (to come) to the station, the train already (to arrive). The passengers (to hurry) to occupy their seats in the carriages. 2. The concert (to be) a greater success than we (to expect). We were very glad. 3. He (to tell) me that if no one (to come) to meet me at the station, I (can) leave the suit-cases in the cloak-room and go to the hotel where he (to reserve) a room for me. 4. He (to be) here five minutes ago, but you (to be) out. He (to ask) me to tell you that he (to come) again tonight. 5. Lanny (to return) home after seven years of absence. During these seven years he (to study) in Cape Town where his people (to send) him. Lanny was glad at the thought that he (to do) what they (to hope) he (to do) and that soon he (to be) among his people again. 6. You (to read) "The Murder of Roger Ackroyd" by Agatha Christie? — No, I (not yet to read) it. But I (to hear) that it (to be) a very interesting book. I (to read) it as soon as I (to get) it.

**Упр. 100.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. When we (to come) to the station, our train already (to leave), and we (to have) to wait for two hours before another one (to come). 2. I was anxious to see the place where I (to spend) my childhood. 3. Victor asked me to explain the new rule to him, as he (to miss) the previous lesson. 4. John Gray (to visit) Russia in 1989 and (not to be) here since that time. 5. When the train (to stop), I (to look) out of the window but (not to see) any of my friends there. I (to send) them a telegram and hoped that they (to meet) me. As I (to discover) later, they (to receive) it ten minutes before the train ar-

rived and could not meet me. 6. We were greatly surprised not to find Ann at home. It turned out that her sister (to forget) to give her our message, and Ann (to leave) the house fifteen minutes before we (to come). 7. I decided not to put on my raincoat as it (to stop) raining already and the sun (to shine) brightly. 8. The young people entered the theatre. The performance already (to begin), and they (to have) to wait till the first act (to be) over. Nina never (to be) here before and she (to like) the theatre very much. 9. I did not recognize Helen as I (not to see) her for a very long time and she greatly (to change). 10. The sight of the school building brought back the old days to us. Here we (to spend) many years together. We (to learn) to read and write; here we (to experience) our first joys and sorrows. We recollected our first day at school, how we (to come) to our first lesson looking alarmed and excited. 11. When the teacher told the boy to recite the poem, the boy (to burst) into tears: he (not to remember) anything, though he (to try) to learn his lesson so hard. 12. Jane usually works in the library. She (to work) there now. She already (to gather) the necessary material and now she (to write) her report.

**Упр. 101.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. Сколько дней вы уже читаете эту книгу? 2. Только когда она была в поезде, она вспомнила, что оставила книгу дома. 3. Они живут в этом доме уже пять лет. 4. Моя сестра была больна уже несколько дней, когда я узнала об этом. 5. Ты знал, что он не написал сочинение? 6. Мы не получаем от нее писем уже несколько месяцев. 7. Сколько лет вы уже работаете на этом заводе? 8. Он уже ушел, когда Лена включила радио. 9. Я работаю над этой проблемой уже три месяца. 10. К счастью, дождь уже перестал, когда мы вышли. 11. Сколько лет вы работаете в этой школе? 12. В одиннадцать часов мы еще работали. 13. В одиннадцать часов мы уже работали три часа. 14. Я уже три раза говорил тебе, что надо переписать упражнение. 15. Я уже целый час читал после обеда, когда пришел пана. 16. Я не приду. Я буду писать сочинение весь вечер. 17. Где ты был с прошлой пятницы? 18. Я уже две недели живу у друзей. 19. Я уже две недели жил

у друзей, когда получил письмо. 20. Вы должны отдохнуть. Вы слишком много работали сегодня. 21. Он был счастлив: он написал отличное сочинение. 22. Я ищу тебя весь вечер. 23. Я вдруг вспомнил, что ничего не ел с утра.

**Упр. 102.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в требуемом времени.

1. Где Мэри? — Она в библиотеке, она готовится к докладу. Она уже работает три часа. 2. Он думал, что его друзья работают вместе. 3. Она была удивлена: она еще никогда не видела столько цветов. 4. Когда я проснулся, мама уже встала и готовила чай. 5. Я уже полчаса стараюсь вспомнить ее имя, но до сих пор еще не вспомнил. 6. Когда он пришел домой, мы уже ушли в кино. 7. Она сказала, что идет дождь и нам лучше сидеть дома. 8. Она жила в этом доме уже пять лет, когда приехал ее брат. 9. Она думала, что будет хорошая погода. 10. Разве ты не понимаешь, что весной будет уже три года, как я ношу эту шляпу. 11. Неужели они играют в шахматы с самого утра? 12. Они шли по дороге уже два или три часа, когда вдруг пошел дождь. 13. Что делает твой брат? — Он работает в институте. — А что он сейчас делает? — Он читает газету. Я всегда приношу ему газеты, когда он приходит с работы. 14. Было уже темно, когда мы подошли к дому; дул сильный ветер, и становилось все холоднее и холоднее. 15. Что вы будете делать завтра в восемь часов вечера? — Завтра к восьми часам я уже закончу все свои уроки, и в восемь часов буду играть на рояле. 16. Они читали Диккенса по-английски, и знают многие его произведения. 17. Наступила зима, и теперь мы опять будем часто ходить на каток. 18. Когда Том вышел из дома, все ребята играли в футбол, а Билл и Джон считали круглые камешки, которые они принесли с реки. 19. Я знаю, что она работает над этой статьей уже три недели. 20. Когда я повторила свой вопрос, он сказал, что не слышал меня в первый раз, но я ясно видела, что он хорошо слышал меня оба раза. 21. Ну, уложила ты свои вещи наконец? Такси уже десять минут ожидает у дверей. 22. Мы сидим здесь уже два часа, а я все еще не рассказал тебе о своей поездке.

## ГЛАВА 5. СТРАДАТЕЛЬНЫЙ ЗАЛОГ

Времена страдательного залога образуются при помощи вспомогательного глагола *to be* в соответствующем времени и формы причастия прошедшего времени (*Past Participle*).

Как и в русском языке, страдательный залог употребляется, когда в центре внимания находится лицо или предмет, который подвергается действию, а не лицо или предмет, который совершает действие. Формой выражения лица или предмета, производящего действие, является косвенное дополнение с предлогом *by* (или *with*, если косвенное дополнение обозначает инструмент или орудие труда): *The images are computed by a four-processor system. Non-destructive observation of specimen surface microstructures down to 10 nm or less can be carried out with an electron scanning microscope.* Страдательный залог также употребляется в тех случаях, когда необходимо описать какие-либо процессы, а также когда лицо, совершающее действие, неизвестно или когда считают ненужным его упоминать: *Business letters are usually written on special forms. This educational networking project is designed for self-managing groups of students, teachers and resource administrators.*

Для всех рассмотренных времен существуют конструкции в страдательном залоге. В страдательном залоге отсутствует форма *Future Continuous*, а также времена группы *Perfect Continuous*. Ниже дана таблица времен в страдательном залоге.

	<b>Simple</b>	<b>Continuous</b>	<b>Perfect</b>
<b>Present</b>	I am invited.	I am being invited.	I have been invited.
<b>Past</b>	I was invited.	I was being invited.	I had been invited.
<b>Future</b>	I shall be invited.	—	I shall have been invited.
<b>Future in the Past</b>	I should be invited.	—	I should have been invited.

При употреблений страдательного залога следует помнить, что в

английском языке, как и в русском, есть переходные (которые могут иметь при себе прямое дополнение) и непереходные (которые не могут иметь при себе прямое дополнение) глаголы. Переходные глаголы могут употребляться как в действительном, так и в страдательном залоге. Непереходные глаголы употребляются только в действительном залоге.

**Упр. 1.** Переделайте предложения так, чтобы они содержали сказуемое в страдательном залоге.

1. You should open the wine about three hours before you use it. 2. Somebody had cleaned my shoes and brushed my suit. 3. We use this room only on special occasions. 4 You must not hammer nails into the walls without permission. 5. Someone switched on a light and opened the door. 6. Somebody had slashed the picture with a knife. 7. Why didn't they mend the roof before it fell in? 8. Someone will serve refreshments. 9. Someone has already told him to report for duty at six. 10. No one can do anything unless someone gives us more information. 11. People are spending far more money on food now than they spent ten years ago. 12. The organizers will exhibit the paintings till the end of the month. 13. It is high time someone told him to stop behaving like a child. 14. They are pulling down the old theatre.

**Упр. 2.** Переделайте предложения так, чтобы они содержали сказуемое в страдательном залоге. Если в исходном предложении есть прямое и косвенное дополнение, сделайте косвенное дополнение подлежащим в новом предложении.

пример; They gave her a clock. She was given a clock.

1. Someone will give you your tickets at the airport. 2. People asked me a lot of questions about my background. 3. Someone usually shows airline passengers how to use a life jacket at the beginning of the flight. 4. If somebody offers you a cheap camera, don't buy it. It's probably stolen. 5. Someone will tell you what you have to do when you arrive. 6. My parents advised me to spend some time abroad before looking for work. 7. Pleased to meet you. People have told me a lot about you. 8. In a few

years' time, my company will send me to our New York office.

**Упр. 3.** Переделайте предложения так, чтобы они содержали сказуемое страдательном залоге, упоминая исполнителя, где необходимо. Если в исходном предложении есть прямое и косвенное дополнение, сделайте косвенное дополнение подлежащим в новом предложении. Обратите внимание на предложения 11, 14, где переход от актива к пассиву осуществляется с помощью вспомогательного глагола *should*.

1. Who wrote it? 2. Compare clothes which we have washed with clothes which any other laundry has washed. 3. They showed her the easiest way to do it. 4. Lightning struck the old oak. 5. Titian couldn't have painted it as people didn't wear that style of dress till after his death. 6. Did the idea interest you? 7. The lawyer gave him the details of his uncle's will. 8. They used to start these engines by hand. Now they start them by electricity. 9. Students are doing a lot of the work. 10. The Prime Minister was to have opened the dry dock. 11. They recommended opening new factories in the depressed area, (should) 12. Anyone with the smallest intelligence could understand these instructions. 13. We will not admit children under sixteen. 14. They suggested making the tests easier, (should)

**Упр. 4.** Страдательный залог часто используется, когда в центре внимания находится лицо или предмет, который подвергается действию, при описании процессов или когда не важен исполнитель. Переделайте предложения так, чтобы они содержали сказуемое в страдательном залоге, и подумайте, какой залог уместнее использовать в каждом случае и почему.

1. Dr Brown widely used statistical methods in his field. 2. I am going to submit a paper to the program committee. 3. Landau introduced the conception of energy density matrix in 1927. 4. We have processed the data obtained with the help of a computer. 5. This procedure reduces the energy losses. 6. Visualization specialists often use conceptual illustration and data-driven visualizations interchangeably. 7. They projected graphics in

stereo onto three walls and the floor. 8. They are displaying both input circuit parameter values and output signal in the same space. 9. A biologist can link cells together into networks, and even systems of networks, to explore how the brain's circuits work. 10. People have used numbers for record-keeping and commercial transactions for centuries. 11. They maintained these conditions throughout the experiment. 12. Everyone may use this program both to explore precomputed datasets and to interactively steer supercomputer simulations. 13. Participants wear stereo glasses to view the images in 3D. 14. In a recent article in *Science*, authors have discussed the difficulty of evaluating numerical simulations. 15. A group of researchers has created these models recently using General Neural Simulation System, a versatile software package developed a decade ago. 16. Nobody can do science without computers.

**Упр. 5.** Переделайте предложения так, чтобы они содержали сказуемое в страдательном залоге. Начните предложения с указанных слов.

1. You have sent us the wrong items again. (The wrong.....) 2. You should have delivered this consignment last week. (This consignment...) 3. Someone broke two of the VDUs during transportation. ( Two.....) 4. You should have sent the documents by registered post. (The documents.....) 5. A faulty connection could have caused the problems with the hard disk. (The problems.....) 6. You omitted the manuals from the order. (The manuals.....) 7. You delivered the printers over three weeks late. (The printers.....) 8. We will not pay the invoice until this problem is rectified. (The invoice.....)

**Упр. 6.** Переделайте предложения так, чтобы они содержали сказуемое в действительном залоге. Если исполнитель не указан: "This door must be kept shut" (школьное объявление) - введите его: "*Students must keep this door shut*".

1. Numerous investigations have been published about this subject. 2. This speed limit is to be introduced gradually. 3. The runways are being lengthened at all the main airports. 4. By tradition any sturgeon that are caught by British ships must be offered to the Queen. 5. Last year a profit of two



million pounds was made in the first six months but this was cancelled by a loss of seventeen million pounds which was made in the second six months. 6. The ship was put into quarantine and passengers and crew were forbidden to land. 7. He was made to surrender his passport. 8. This scientific theory has now been proved to be false. 9. Why wasn't the car either locked or put into the garage? 10. It is being said that too little money is being spent by the government on road». 11. Your money could be put to good use instead of being left idle in the bank.

**Упр. 7.** Поставьте глаголы в газетных сообщениях в требуемую по контексту форму.

### **Castle fire**

Winton Castle (a)\_\_\_\_\_ (damage) in a fire last night. The fire, which (b)\_\_\_\_\_ (discover) at about 9 o'clock, spread very quickly. Nobody (c)\_\_\_\_\_ (injure) but two people had to (d)\_\_\_\_\_ (rescue) from an upstairs room. A number of paintings (e)\_\_\_\_\_ (believe/destroy). It (f)\_\_\_\_\_ (not/know) how the fire started.

### **Shop robbery**

In Paxham yesterday a shop assistant (a) \_\_\_\_\_ (force) to hand over \$500 after (b)\_\_\_\_\_ (threaten) by a man with a knife. The man escaped in a car which (c)\_\_\_\_\_ (steal) earlier in the day. The car (d) \_\_\_\_\_ (later/find) in a car park where it (e)\_\_\_\_\_. (abandon) by the thief. A man (f)\_\_\_\_\_ (arrest) in connection with the robbery and (g)\_\_\_\_\_ (still/question) by the police.

### **Road delays**

Repair work started yesterday on the Paxham-Longworth road. The road (a) \_\_\_\_\_ (resurface) and there will be long delays. Drivers (b)\_\_\_\_\_ (ask) to use an alternative route if possible. The work (c)\_\_\_\_\_ (expect) to last two weeks. Next Sunday the road (d)\_\_\_\_\_ (close) and traffic (e),\_\_\_\_\_ (divert).

### **Accident**

A woman (a)\_\_\_\_\_ (take) to hospital after her car collided with a

lorry near Norstock yesterday. She (b)\_\_\_\_\_ (allow) home later after treatment. The road (c)\_\_\_\_\_ (block) for an hour after the accident and traffic had to (d)\_\_\_\_\_ (divert). A police inspector said afterwards:

The woman was lucky. She could (e)\_\_\_\_\_ (kill).

**Упр. 8.** Поставьте глагол в скобках в нужном по контексту времени и залоге.

Пример: My car *was stolen* (steal) last night.

Joseph Ford, the politician who (a)\_\_\_\_\_ (kidnap) last week as he was driving to his office, (b)\_\_\_\_\_ (release) unharmed. He (c)\_\_\_\_\_ (examine) by a doctor last night, and (d)\_\_\_\_\_ (say) to be in good health. Mr Ford (e)\_\_\_\_\_. (find) walking along a small country lane early yesterday evening. A farmer (f)\_\_\_\_\_ (see) him, recognized who it was, and (g)\_\_\_\_\_ (contact) the police. When his wife (h)\_\_\_\_\_ (tell) the news, she said, "I'm delighted and relieved that my husband (i)\_\_\_\_\_ (find)." Acting on information received, the police made several arrests, and a man (j)\_\_\_\_\_ (question) in connection with the kidnapping.

**Упр. 9.** В следующих предложениях некоторые глаголы (но не все) употреблены в действительном залоге, хотя страдательный залог был бы более ) уместен и наоборот. Измените те предложения, которые по Вашему мнению нуждаются в исправлении, имея в виду, что пассивные конструкции также используется, если хотят сделать утверждение безличным, чтобы, например, избежать ответственности за сообщение неприятного известия. Сравните два следующих утверждения, которые может сделать компания.

Пример: We have awarded our staff a twenty per cent pay rise.

Unfortunately, the number of staff will be reduced by fifty percent.

1. Someone built this bridge in 1901. 2. No one has seen the escaped prisoner since a guard was knocked out by him and he ran away. 3. A secretary has invited me to Buckingham Palace to collect an award! 4. Some-

one wants you in reception. 5. The telephone, which was invented by Alexander Graham Bell in 1876, revolutionized man's ability to communicate. 6. The closure of the workshops will make a lot of men redundant. 7. At interviews, people ask you quite searching questions. 8. Alexander Graham Bell was a scientist and inventor. The telephone was invented by him in 1876, and he also worked on early radio transmitters. 9. Scientists working in California have discovered a drug which stops premature aging. They will now manufacture the drug commercially, and it should be available soon. 10. Nobody must take reference books out of the library. 11. The Health Service has prospered under this government. It is true that we have closed hospitals and spent less money, but the system is now streamlined. 12. A tiger was found roaming in a suburban garden today. Mrs Ethel Templeton found the tiger while she was hanging out her washing. 13. We broke a few cups while you were away. Sorry. They'll be replaced. Apart from that, we didn't do much damage at all. 14. I'm a fantastically successful author. I have sold over one million copies of my books. 15. Doctors have given him six months to live.

**Упр. 10.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Passive Voice*.

1. At the last competition the first prize (to win) by our team. 2. The question (to settle) as soon as they arrived. 3. Your report must (to divide) into two chapters. 4. Soon he (to send) to a sanatorium. 5. The book (to discuss) at the next conference. 6. The composition must (to hand) in on Wednesday. 7. Yesterday he (to tell) to prepare a speech. 8. The article (to publish) last week, if I am not mistaken. 9. The lectures (to attend) by all of us. 10. A taxi (to call) fifteen minutes ago, so we are expecting it any moment. 11. The young man (to introduce) to me only a couple of hours ago, but it seems to me that I've known him for years. 12. The rule explained by the teacher at the last lesson (to understand) by all of us. 13. The poem was so beautiful that it (to learn) by everybody. 14. I hope the invitation (to accept) by everybody. 15. The letter (to post) in half an hour. 16. It seems to me that music (to hear) from the next room.

**Упр. 11.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Active* или *Passive*

*Voice.*

1. Nobody (to see) him yesterday. 2. The telegram (to receive) tomorrow. 3. He (to give) me this book next week. 4. The answer to this question can (to find) in the encyclopedia. 5. We (to show) the historical monuments of the capital to the delegation. 6. You can (to find) interesting information about the life in the USA in this book. 7. Budapest (to divide) by the Danube into two parts: Buda and Pest. 8. Yuri Dolgoruki (to found) Moscow in 1147. 9. Moscow University (to found) by Lomonosov. 10. We (to call) Zhukovski the father of Russian aviation.

**Упр. 12.** Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в *Passive Voice*.

1. I am sure I (to ask) at the lesson tomorrow. 2. They told me that the new student (to speak) much about. 3. The hostess said that one more guest (to expect). 4. The newspaper said that an interesting exhibition (to open) in the Hermitage the next week. 5. This new dictionary (to sell) everywhere now. 6. All the texts (to look) through yesterday and not a single mistake (to find). 7. Two reports on Hemingway's stories (to make) in our group last month. Both of them were very interesting. 8. He said that Grandmother's letter (to receive) the day before. 9. Two new engineers just (to introduce) to the head of the department. 10. Don't worry, everything will be all right: the children (to take) to the theatre by the teacher and they (to bring) back to school in the evening.

**Упр. 13.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в *Passive Voice*.

1. Ее отправили в больницу два дня назад. 2. Вчера нас послали в лабораторию. 3. Это сочинение было написано на прошлой неделе. 4. Эту книгу взяли из библиотеки только вчера. 5. Этих трех студентов спросили два дня тому назад. 6. Вас экзаменовали утром? 7. Этамышь была поймана ночью. 8. Телеграмму послали поздно вечером, и он получит ее только утром. 9. Эту статью должна прочитать вся группа. 10. Это упражнение можно написать карандашом. 11. Все ваши сочинения будут возвращены на будущей неделе. 12. Это письмо можно написать на одном листе. 13. На этой фабрике делают

очень красивые сумки. 14. Письма туда можно посылать только летом, а телеграммы круглый год. 15. Мою подругу каждый год посылают за границу.

**Упр. 14.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в Passive Voice.

1. За этим доктором часто посылают. 2. На вокзале его всегда встречают друзья. 3. Вам в школе дают книги для чтения? 4. Пленников провели в большой зал. 5. Какие упражнения делали в классе? 6. Кто написал это письмо? 7. В будущем году построят много школ. 8. Эта работа будет закончена на будущей неделе? 9. Над ним все смеются. 10. Когда были посажены эти яблони? 11. В институте его часто вспоминали и говорили о нем. 12. Нас встретят на станции? 13. Ответ будет отправлен через несколько дней. 14. Когда тебя спрашивали? 15. Этот перевод будет закончен через несколько дней. 16. Эту книгу вернут вовремя? 17. На вокзале его встретит папа. 18. Эта картина была написана в XVI веке. 19. Эти книги используются для работы? 20. В Италии нам покажут много достопримечательностей. 21. За этим мужчиной шла огромная толпа. 22. Когда читали новый рассказ, кто-то постучал в дверь. 23. Вас уже пригласили на вечер? 24. Когда мама пришла, обед был уже сварен.

**Упр. 15.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в Passive Voice.

1. Собор Святого Павла строил архитектор Рен. 2. Когда написали письмо? 3. Куда положили книги? 4. За доктором пошлют завтра. 5. В Санкт Петербурге строят много домов. 6. Произведения английских и американских писателей издают во всем мире. 7. Стихи Роберта Бернса знают во многих странах мира. 8. Когда Чарльз Диккенс был маленьким мальчиком, его отца посадили в долговую тюрьму. 9. Эта опера была написана сто лет назад. 10. Этот роман уже переведен на пять языков. 11. Обед варили, когда я пришел домой. 12. К тому времени, как он приехал, письмо было уже получено. 13. Наш дом сейчас ремонтируют. 14. Колю как раз спрашивают. 15. Книги уже при-

несли из библиотеки? 16. Этот кинотеатр был построен до того, как мы приехали сюда. 17. Где сейчас ваш брат?— Его послали во Францию. 18. О вас только что говорили. 19. Дома над ней посмеялись. 20. «Мне только что приказали ввести пленных,»— сказал солдат. 21. Кто написал это письмо? 22. Эти цветы только что сорвали. 23. Тебя вчера просили прийти пораньше? 24. В будущем году его пьеса будет поставлена в этом театре. 25. За этим профессором всегда посылают в трудных ситуациях.

**Упр. 16.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в *Passive Voice*.

1. Меня ждут? 2. Им задали три трудных вопроса. 3. За директором уже послали. Подождите немного. 4. Всех пригласили в большой зал. 5. Эти письма просмотрены. Их можно отправлять. 6. На станции их встретил гид и отвез в гостиницу. 7. Эти журналы должны быть возвращены в библиотеку на следующей неделе. 8. На наших занятиях много внимания уделяется произношению. 9. Иванову велели объяснить, почему он пропускает занятия. 10. Меня пригласят на ваш вечер? 11. Детей оставили дома одних. 12. Нам показали очень странную картину. 13. Тебя ищут. Иди домой. 14. Вас всех соберут в зале и расскажут обо всех изменениях в школьной программе. 15. Почему над ним всегда смеются? 16. Нам всем дали билеты на выставку. 17. Лекции этого знаменитого профессора всегда слушают с большим вниманием.

**Упр. 17.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в *Passive Voice*.

1. Эту статью написал один английский журналист. 2. Это стихотворение должны выучить все студенты нашей группы. 3. Статья должна быть переведена к пяти часам. 4. Перевод будет закончен вовремя. 5. Когда я пришла домой, обед был уже сварен. 6. Их будут обучать английскому языку. 7. Когда яблоко было съедено, девочка взяла куклу и пошла в комнату. 8. Когда будет написана ваша книга? 9. Все эти книги взяты из библиотеки. 10. Диктант был сдан преподавателю по-

сле звонка. 11. Я думала, что хлеб и масло купит моя сестра. 12. Весной это поле будет покрыто зеленой травой и цветами. 13. Уроки были приготовлены, книги и тетради уложены в портфель. 14. Письма были оставлены на столе. 15. Мальчику не разрешили купаться в реке. 16. После обеда посуда была вымыта. 17. Письмо было написано вчера. 18. Статья была переведена без ошибок. 19. Нам показали много красивых вещей. 20. Стихотворение было выучено наизусть. 21. Работа была выполнена очень хорошо. 22. Книгу положили в шкаф.

**Упр. 18.** Переведите на английский язык, употребляя глаголы в *Passive Voice*.

1. Этот рассказ обсудили на уроке литературы. 2. Его воспитала сестра. 3. Не беспокойся, ему помогут в работе. 4. В нашем районе строятся три новые школы. 5. Меня представили ее отцу вчера. 6. Когда я вернусь домой, все мои чемоданы будут уже уложены. 7. На какой учебник вы ссылаетесь в вашем докладе? 8. Разве это сочинение было написано до того, как вы делали доклад? 9. Ее слушали невнимательно, и все, что она сказала, было вскоре забыто. 10. Об этом эпизоде много говорят в нашем доме. 11. Нас провели в зал и предложили нам хорошие места. 12. Послали за лекарством? — Да, его ищут. 13. Этот мост еще строится. Он строился, когда я его увидел в первый раз. 14. Когда я начал им помогать, статью уже переводили. 15. Когда я приду домой, обед будут готовить.

### 5.1. Сочетаемость глаголов и существительных

Употребление таких часто используемых глаголов, как *take*, *make*, *do*, *have* вызывает иногда определенные трудности. Выбор глагола часто определяется следующим за ним существительным (прямым дополнением), а не только словарным значением глагола.

**Упр. 19.** Образуйте правильные выражения, используя глаголы **make** и **do**. Затем закончите предложения, используя нужное выражение в соответствующей форме.

1. _____ a mistake	8 _____ sense	15 _____ an exam
2. _____ nothing	9 _____ my homework	16 _____ progress
3. _____ a noise	10 _____ the housework	17 _____ a speech
4. _____ one's best	11 _____ a complaint	18 _____ a mess
5. _____ money	12 _____ up my mind to	19 _____ sure that
6. _____ a will	13 _____ business with	20 _____ someone a
7. _____ friends with	14 _____ a phone call	favour

1. Could you \_\_\_\_\_? Could you give me a lift to the station?
2. At first I found English difficult, but now I'm beginning \_\_\_\_\_.
3. Customer to waiter: "I think you \_\_\_\_\_. My bill should be \$5, not \$15."
4. I \_\_\_\_\_ a lot of \_\_\_\_\_ with the Chinese. They are good customers of mine.
5. Can you understand these instructions? They \_\_\_\_\_ to me.
6. It took me a long time to decide, but I have finally \_\_\_\_\_
7. Sh! Don't \_\_\_\_\_. The baby's asleep.
8. Hello. I'd like \_\_\_\_\_. There's no hot water in my room. to accept the job.
9. Before going on holiday you should \_\_\_\_\_ all windows and doors are shut and locked.
10. A You must try harder.  
B I'm \_\_\_\_\_.  
A Well, it's not good enough.
11. Yesterday the Prime Minister \_\_\_\_\_ in the House of Commons.
12. It took me hours to clean your room. If you \_\_\_\_\_ again, you can clean it up yourself.

**Упр. 20.** Заполните пропуск нужной по контексту формой глаголов *make* или *do*.

1. You can't rely on him. He is always \_\_\_\_\_ excuses for never getting things done.
2. Just a minute, I have to \_\_\_\_\_ a call.
3. The recent cable break has \_\_\_\_\_ a lot of damage.
4. You either know the answer or you don't. It's no good \_\_\_\_\_ guesses.
5. Which modern languages are you \_\_\_\_\_?
6. We \_\_\_\_\_ an agreement and you've broken it.
7. I've got a lot of jobs



to\_\_\_\_this morning. 8. I shouldn't employ him. He's always\_\_\_\_trouble.  
9. We've been studying this radiation for a year, but we haven't\_\_\_\_much progress. 10. A car that size only\_\_\_\_about 10 miles to the gallon.

**Упр. 21.** Заполните пропуск нужной по контексту формой глагола have + существительное из списка. Обратите внимание на то, что в сочетаниях типа have breakfast / lunch артикль не употребляется (исключение: have a meal)

**drink row look swim bath breakfast word day game time supper**

Пример: "Would you like to *have a drink*? "Yes, please. I'm very thirsty."

1. "Did you watch TV last night?"

"No, I\_\_\_\_\_and went straight to bed."

2. "Did you\_\_\_\_\_a good\_\_\_\_\_of tennis?"

"Yes, I won 6-0, 6-2."

3. "Bye, Mum. I'm going out now!"

"Goodbye, darling.\_\_\_\_\_a nice\_\_\_\_\_!"

4. "Did you\_\_\_\_\_this morning?"

"No, I got up too late. I just had a cup of coffee."

5. I'm going to\_\_\_\_\_a\_\_\_\_\_and wash my hair. I feel dirty.

6. I have a swimming pool at home, so if you want to\_\_\_\_\_a\_\_\_\_\_, just come round.

7. "Did you\_\_\_\_\_a good\_\_\_\_\_at the office, dear?"

"No, I didn't. The boss was very angry with me."

8. Peter and I always argue. We don't agree about anything. Yesterday we\_\_\_\_\_a\_\_\_\_\_about politics.

9. I've got my holiday photographs. Do you want to\_\_\_\_\_a\_\_\_\_\_?

10. John! Could I\_\_\_\_\_a\_\_\_\_\_with you for a minute? There's something I want to ask you about

**Упр. 22.** Для глаголов, совпадающих с существительным по форме, конструкция have + a + noun обозначает однократное действие. Герундий Используется для обозначения повторяющегося действия.

Пример:

I *had* a talk with Susan last night.

*Talking* to someone about a problem usually helps to solve it.

Составьте по два предложения для каждого из следующих слов, одно с герундием, а другое с **have + a + noun**.

ride \_\_\_\_\_

drink \_\_\_\_\_

look \_\_\_\_\_

wash \_\_\_\_\_

quarrel \_\_\_\_\_

walk \_\_\_\_\_

shave \_\_\_\_\_

smoke \_\_\_\_\_

sleep \_\_\_\_\_

try \_\_\_\_\_

swim \_\_\_\_\_

**Упр. 23.** Образуйте словосочетания глаголов *have*, *take*, *make* и *do* с существительными и словосочетаниями из предложенного списка, написав их под соответствующим глаголом.

Пример:

<b>take</b>	<b>have</b>	<b>make</b>	<b>do</b>
your time	a good time	a mistake	homework

Список существительных и словосочетаний:

a good time, a mistake, homework, your time, a comparison, a suggestion, an arrangement, a rest, a favour, a proposal, dinner, a headache, an experiment, my best, an appointment, a good job, housework, lunch, friends, sure, advantage, a trip, a speech, an effort, medicine, money, an airplane, a bet, an exam, place, pan, notes, a promise, a chance, a cough, progress, a turn, a recommendation, a reservation, research, a bath, a bus, your seat, your temperature, the floor, a cold, heart trouble, a difference, reservations, use

**Упр. 24.** Определите, какое из подчеркнутых слов или выражений

употреблено неверно. Исправьте ошибку.

1. The decision that is done will depend largely on what recommendations the teaching staff makes to the director.
2. Unless a patient takes his medicine regularly, he is unlikely to do fast progress toward full recovery.
3. The president has not yet made several key appointments in the judiciary branch.
4. Remarkable advances have been done recently in medicine.
5. Individuals who take time to do some type of daily exercise are likely to be healthy.
6. Sleep scientists are still making research on various types of sleep disorders.
7. Candidates for high-level political office are unlikely to do promises which they cannot keep.
8. If you want to do money you've got to take chances.
9. Several proposals have been done concerning a new nuclear power station.
10. The fact that the space shuttle is reusable shows the progress that has been done in space technology.

## 5.2. Глаголы, близкие по написанию или значению

Использование ряда глаголов вызывает трудности из-за того, что их значения либо написание близки. Часть этих глаголов неправильные и иногда одна из форм неправильного глагола может совпадать с формами других глаголов.

**Упр 25.** Заполните пропуски в таблице недостающими глагольными формами.

Инфинитив	2-ая форма (Simple Past)	Причастие II	Причастие I
1. sit	<i>sat</i>	<i>sat</i>	<i>sitting</i>
2. set			
3. lie			
4. lay			
5. rise			
6. raise			
7. fall			
8. feel			
9. fill			

Обратите внимание на то, что за глаголами **sit, lie, rise** никогда не следует прямое дополнение, и они не употребляются в страдательном залоге.

**Упр. 26.** Выберите требуемый по контексту глагол из двух предложенных в скобках.

1. The flag was (risen, raised) to the top of the pole. 2. The campers got up as soon as sun had (risen, raised). 3. The defendant (rose, raised) and faced the jury. 4. The old man has (sat, set) on the park bench all afternoon. 5. The pastry chef (sat, set) the pies on the counter to cool. 6. The pies had been (sat, set) out on the counter to cool. 7. The old tools had (lain, laid) away in the basement for years. 8. The tools were (lain, laid) away in the basement. 9. As soon as the child (lay, laid) his head on the pillow, he fell asleep. 10. (Lying, laying) in the driveway was a bicycle.

**Упр. 27.** Заполните пропуски нужной по контексту формой глагола fall, feel или fill.

1. I \_\_\_\_\_ hungry. (Past Ind.) 2. The prices for vegetables and fruit \_\_\_\_\_ in July. (Past Ind.) 3. Everybody \_\_\_\_\_ pity for the old sick man. (Pres. Ind.) 4. In spring the sick man \_\_\_\_\_ much better. (Past Ind.) 5. I didn't \_\_\_\_\_ like going to the club that night. 6. Her black straight hair \_\_\_\_\_ over her shoulders. (Past Ind.) 7. I \_\_\_\_\_ the glass with water. (Past Ind.) 8. The leaves \_\_\_\_\_ in September and October. (Pres. Ind.) 9. How are you \_\_\_\_\_ today?

**Упр. 28.** Заполните пропуски нужной по контексту формой глагола lie или lay.

1. Last night I \_\_\_\_\_ the book on the desk. It \_\_\_\_\_ on it now. 2. The old woman had a poor health. She \_\_\_\_\_ ill for a long time. 3. He \_\_\_\_\_ his hand on my shoulder. (Past Ind.) 4. In summer we often \_\_\_\_\_ in the sun. (Present Ind.) 5. Don't \_\_\_\_\_ in bed all the morning! 6. The book \_\_\_\_\_ open on the sofa. (Past Ind.) 7. It's night. The city \_\_\_\_\_ quiet. 8. The mother \_\_\_\_\_ the new-year present near her daughter's bed. (Past Ind.) 9. He is still a young man. Life \_\_\_\_\_ before him. 10. She knows

where her interests\_\_\_\_\_. 11. London\_\_\_\_\_on the Thames.  
12. I\_\_\_\_\_my things into the suit-case. (Past Ind.).

**Упр. 29.** Заполните пропуски нужной по контексту формой глагола rise или raise

1. He\_\_\_\_\_very early. (Pres. Ind.) 2. They\_\_\_\_\_from the table. (Past Ind.) 3. He\_\_\_\_\_his voice but it was too noisy in the hall to hear it 4. His voice \_\_\_\_\_. 5. Some hills\_\_\_\_\_beyond the lake. (Past Ind.) 6. Don't do it, it may \_\_\_your temperature. 7. The price for flowers\_\_\_\_\_a little. (Past Ind.) 8. She\_\_\_\_\_her eyes. (Past Ind.) 9. The hair\_\_\_\_\_on his head. (Past Ind.) 10. In spring the river\_\_\_\_\_. (Pres. Ind.) 11. He\_\_\_\_\_his hat and said "Good morning" to me. 12. I\_\_\_\_\_my glass to your health. (Pres. Cont.)

**Упр. 30.** Определите залог подчеркнутого глагола (действительный или страдательный) и правильный ли глагол употреблен. В случае ошибки -исправьте ее.

1. The motorist ran over a child's toy that was lying in the street. 2. The old box that had laid in the attic for ten years was covered with dust and cobwebs. 3. The flag was raised to half-mast to honour the dead soldier. 4. The bathmat lying on the floor is over ten years old. 5. Prices of citrus and fruits were risen because of the severe frost 6. No sooner had the moon risen than a cloud obscured it from view. 7. The seedlings should not be set out until after the last frost. 8. His fear of a relapse was lain to rest by the doctor's words. 9. Presuming the price of silver would soon raise, investors bought large quantities of the metal. 10. By lying motionless, an animal can more easily camouflage itself. 11. Clocks should be sit forward one hour when daylight saving time ends. 12. Although the rent was raised twice, it is still lower than one might expect. 13. These bricks were obviously laid by a very careless worker. 14. Having been ris-en in a small town, the writer was at his best when describing scenes of rural America. 15. Kittens which are not raised around humans are difficult to tame completely.

## Обзорные упражнения на времена и залоги

**Упр. 31.** Выберите наиболее подходящий по контексту вариант.

1. Everything is going well. *We didn't have/haven't had* any problems so far.
2. Margaret *didn't go/hasn't gone* to work yesterday. She wasn't feeling well.
3. Look! That man over there *wears/is wearing* the same sweater as you.
4. Your son is much taller than when I last saw him. He *grew/has grown* a lot.
5. I still don't know what to do. I *didn't decide/haven't decided* yet.
6. I wonder why Jim *is/is being* so nice to me today. He isn't usually like that.
7. Jane had a book open in front of her but she *didn't read/wasn't reading* it.
8. I wasn't very busy. I *didn't have/wasn't having* much to do.
9. Mary wasn't happy in her new job at first but she *begins/is beginning* to enjoy it now.
10. After leaving school, Tim *found/has found* it very difficult to get a job.
11. When Sue heard the news, she *wasn't/hasn't been* very pleased.
12. This is a nice restaurant, isn't it? Is this the first time you *are/you've been* here?
13. I need a new job. *I'm doing/I've been doing* the same job for too long.
14. "Ann has gone out." "Oh, has she? What time *did she go/has she gone*?"
15. "You look tired." "Yes, *I've played/I've been playing* basketball."
16. Where *are you coming/do you come* from? Are you American?
17. I'd like to see Tina again. It's a long time *since I saw her/that I didn't see her*.
18. Bob and Alice have been married *since 20 years/for 20 years*.

**Упр. 32.** Определите, какой из подчеркнутых элементов предложения содержит ошибку.

1. New York City has been (A) the capital of New York State until (B) 1797 when (C) the state capital was moved (D) to Albany.
2. The advantages of computerized typing (A) and editing (B) are now being extending (C) to all the written (D) languages of the world.
3. Rubber can be made (A) too (B) elastic that it will stretch (C) more than nine times its (D) normal length.
4. Since (A) their high vitamin and low calorie content (B), mushrooms are included (C) in certain diets (D).
5. Leave (A) me tell (B) a (C) funny story I've heard (D),

**Упр. 33.** В приведенных диалогах примерно половина форм будущее времени употреблена неверно. Найдите ошибки. Иногда возможно больше чем одно правильное решение.

Пример: A What are you doing this weekend?

B Nothing. I stay at home. / *I'm staying.*

1. A I'm terribly sorry! I've spilt coffee on your carpet. It'll stain.

B Don't worry. I'm getting a cloth to wipe it off.

2. A What do you do when you've finished this course?

B I'm going back to Spain.

3. A Have you got a job in Spain?

B No. I'll go back to university. I have to finish my final year.

4. A Am I disturbing you if I ring tonight?

B Not at all. I won't be doing anything important.

5. A What time does your train get in?

B At 11.00. If it's late, I'm going to miss my appointment,

6. A Have you decided what you'll do if you don't get the job?

B I do a retraining scheme.

**Упр. 34.** Выберите наиболее подходящий по контексту вариант.

A Hello, Henry. How are you?

B Fine. And you?

A: Not so bad, thanks. Listen, I'm ringing to try to arrange a meeting with you. (a) *I'll be coming/I'm coming/I come* to London next Wednesday to see some customers, (b) *I'm going to see/I'll see/I'm seeing* them in the morning, (c) *Will you be/are you/are you going to be* free any time in the afternoon?

B: (d) *I won't be/I'm not/I'm not going to be* in London, I'm afraid, (e) *I'll/I'm going/I'll be going* abroad for a few days on business.

A: Oh, where (f) *do you go/will you go/are you going*?

B: To Germany. I have a meeting in Bonn. My company (g) *will open/opens/is opening* a new office there next year.

A: Mmm. Sounds exciting. When (h) *do you go/are you going/will you go*?

B: On Monday evening, and (i) *I'm not back I won't be back/I'm not going to be back* until Thursday morning.

A: Oh, well. I could stay overnight and see you then. What time (j) *is your plane getting in /does your plane get in/will your plane get in?*

B: 10.40, so if I get a taxi, (k) *I'll be/I am/I could be* in my office at 12.00.

A: On second thoughts, don't do that. (l) *I'll see/I'll be seeing/I'm going to see* you at the airport. We can talk there, (m) *We finish/we're finishing* M'2" *have finished* by 2.00, probably, so then we can have something to eat and I can get the 3.00 shuttle back to Manchester. How does that sound?

B: Fine. We'll sort it all out then. Thanks for ringing. Bye.

A: Cheerio, (n) */ see/I'll be seeing/I'll see* you on Thursday. Have a good trip.

**Упр. 35.** Употребите глаголы в скобках в требуемой по контексту форме будущего времени. Иногда возможна более чем одна правильная форма.

I. John and Anita (a)\_\_\_\_(get) married in two weeks' time. The church ceremony (b)\_\_\_\_(start) at 3.00, so all the guests (c)\_\_\_\_(have) to be in their seats by 2.50. Anita (d)\_\_\_\_(give) away by her brother, as her father died a few years ago, and John's brother, Paul, (e)\_\_\_\_(be) his best man, so he (f)\_\_\_\_(have) to make sure all the arrangements go smoothly. They (g)\_\_\_\_(have) the reception in the King's Head Hotel, and then the happy couple (h)\_\_\_\_(go) to Italy for their honeymoon. They (i)\_\_\_\_(stay) in a hotel near Lake Como for two weeks, and when they come back Anita (j)\_\_\_\_(start) looking for a job. By the time it's all over, it (k)\_\_\_\_(cost) them over two thousand pounds! What a lot of money!

II. A When (l)\_\_\_\_you\_\_\_\_(get) changed? The taxi (m)\_\_\_\_(arrive) any minute, and you aren't even ready yet! B Don't worry. We've got ages. What time (n)\_\_\_\_the play\_\_\_\_(start)? 7.00, isn't it? If the traffic isn't too bad, we (o)\_\_\_\_(get) to the theatre by 6.30, and then we (p)\_\_\_\_(have) time for a quick drink.

A What (q)\_\_\_\_we\_\_\_\_(do) about eating tonight?

B Keith (r)\_\_\_\_(take) us out to a Chinese restaurant afterwards. Had



you forgotten?

A Oh, yes. What time (s)\_\_\_\_\_we\_\_\_\_\_ (get) back? I (t)\_\_\_\_\_ (have) to tell the babysitter.

B About midnight, I should think.

**Упр. 36.** Выберите наилучший ответ. Среди ответов подходящим может быть один или два.

1. When is your meeting with Mr Thomas?

- a. I'll see him at 10 a.m. tomorrow.
- b. I'm seeing him at 10 a.m. tomorrow,
- c I see him at 10 a.m. tomorrow.

2. What time is your train?

- a. It leaves at 7.30 p.m.
- b. It's going to leave at 7.30 p.m.
- c It is leaving at 7.30 p.m.

3. I'm going to phone for a pizza. Do you want one?

- a. Yes, I'll have one too.
- b. Yes, I am going to have one too.
- c Yes, I have one too.

4. Goodbye.

- a. Goodbye. I'm going to see you soon.
- b. Goodbye. I'll see you soon.
- c. Goodbye. I see you soon.

5. ... and what about the third day of our tour of Mogul India?

- a. On the third day you travel by train to Agra.
- b. On the third day you are going to travel by train to Agra.
- c. On the third day you'll be travelling by train to Agra.

6. Look at the skater! I think she's in danger!

- a. Yes, the ice breaks!
- b. Yes, the ice is going to break!
- c Yes, the ice will break!

7. You must be looking forward to going.

- a. Yes, this time next week I'll be spending all day on the beach.
- b. Yes, this time next week I am spending all day on the beach.

- c Yes, this time next week I spend all day on the beach.
8. Bill is standing for election next month, isn't he?
- a. Yes, but he doesn't win.
- b. Yes, but he won't win.
- c Yes, but he won't be winning.
9. John is getting very nervous. Why is that?
- a. He'll perform in the concert on Saturday.
- b. He is performing in the concert on Saturday.
- c He'll be performing in the concert on Saturday.
10. You like Charles Dickens, don't you?
- a. Yes, next year I'll read all his novels again.
- b. Yes, next year I am going to read all his novels again,
- c Yes, next year I'm reading all his novels again.
11. Does Michael know about the change of date?
- a. No, but if I see him I'll tell him.
- b. No, but if I see him I'm going to tell him.
- c No, but if I see him I'll be telling him.
12. Have you bought your new house yet?
- a. Yes, we are moving next month.
- b. Yes, we'll move next month.
- c Yes, we move next month.
13. You look pale. Are you all right?
- a. I'll be sick!
- b. I'm going to be sick!
- c I'm being sick!
14. Your new radio doesn't work.
- a. I know. I'm going to take it back.
- b. I know. I'll take it back.
- c I know. I'll be taking it back.
15. ... so I'm afraid we can't refund your money, madam.
- a. I'm not satisfied. I'll take this matter further.
- b. I'm not satisfied. I'm going to take this matter farther.
- c I'm not satisfied. I'm taking this matter further.

**Упр. 37.** Употребите глаголы в нужном по контексту грамматическом времени.

### **A car**

It is a self- propelled road vehicle. The search for a means of replacing the horse as a means of transport (1)\_\_\_\_(begin) seriously at the beginning of the 18<sup>th</sup> century, when Newcomen and Watt (2)\_\_\_\_(show) that steam could be harnessed to produce power. A working steam carriage(3)\_\_\_\_(build) in 1808. But an effective horseless carriage (4)\_\_\_\_(need) a smaller efficient power source. This (5)\_\_\_\_eventually\_\_\_\_(provide) by two German engineers who in 1876 (6)\_\_\_\_(patent) the Otto-cycle internal-combustion engine.

In 1890 Daimler and Benz (7)\_\_\_\_ (sell) the motorized dog cars that were the forerunners of the modern car.

By the start of World War 1 some 130 000 cars (8)\_\_\_\_(register) in the UK. Nevertheless, motoring was still the preserve of the rich.

Since the 1950s competition throughout the world (9)\_\_\_\_(be) fierce. In the UK major competitors in world mass markets now (10)\_\_\_\_(include) the Rover Group, Jaguar and Ford.

The future of the private car is uncertain: world reserves of oil (11)\_\_\_\_ (diminish) at present, the cost of the car (12)\_\_\_\_(rise). It may be that the petrol supplies (13)\_\_\_\_(hold out) until an economical alternative (14)\_\_\_\_(find) and that traffic (15)\_\_\_\_better\_\_\_\_(manage) or it may be that the private car (16)\_\_\_\_again\_\_\_\_(become) the privilege of the rich.

### **The microwave background radiation**

In 1949, two of Gamow's students, Ralph Alpher and Robert Herman, (1)\_\_\_\_(calculate) that the temperature of the microwave background radiation today (2) \_\_\_\_ (be) about 5K. Remarkably, this prediction (3)\_\_\_\_(ignore) by observational astronomers for the next 15 years! The microwave background radiation (4)\_\_\_\_finally\_\_\_\_(discover) accidentally in 1964 by Arno Penzias and Robert Wilson while they (5)\_\_\_\_(measure) noise inherent in radio receivers. They (6)\_\_\_\_ (make) an extremely sensitive radio receiver, but wherever they (7)\_\_\_\_(look) in the sky, they (8)\_\_\_\_(find) that it was a little hotter than they (9)\_\_\_\_(expect). It turned

out that they (10)\_\_\_\_(discover) the microwave background radiation.

Since this discovery there (11)\_\_\_\_(be) many observations of this radiation to try to detect variations in temperature along different lines of sight. One of the remarkable facts of astrophysics to emerge over the last more than 30 years (12),\_\_\_\_(be) the extraordinary smoothness of this fossil radiation. We now (13)\_\_\_\_(know) that the temperature of the radiation (14)\_\_\_\_ (vary) by less than one part in 30,000 on an angular scales, once one (15)\_\_\_\_(make) the correction for the Doppler effect. The amazing smoothness of the microwave background radiation (16)\_\_\_\_(tell) us that the universe is "simple" in the sense that it is both homogeneous and isotropic. In other words, if we (17)\_\_\_\_(look) at the content of a small volume of the universe and (18)\_\_\_\_(compare) it to any other such volume, the average properties (19)\_\_\_\_(be) the same.

### Тесты на времена и залоги

**Упр. 38.** Выберите вариант ответа, который вы считаете правильным.

#### Present and Past.

1. \_\_\_\_\_ this week? "No, she's on holiday."

A Is Susan working    B Does Susan work    C Does work Susan

2. I don't understand this sentence. What \_\_\_\_\_?

A does mean this word    B does this word mean    C means this word

3. John \_\_\_\_\_ tennis once or twice a week.

A is playing usually    B is usually playing    C usually plays    D plays usually

4. How \_\_\_\_\_ now? Better than before?

A you are feeling    B do you fee!    C are you feeling

5. It was a boring weekend. \_\_\_\_\_ anything.

A I didn't    B I don't do    C I didn't do

6. Tom \_\_\_\_\_ his hand when he was cooking the dinner.

A burnt    B was burning    C has burnt

#### Present Perfect and Past

1. Jim is away on holiday. He \_\_\_\_\_ to Spain.

- A is gone                      B has gone                      C has been
2. Everything is going well. We \_\_\_\_\_ any problems so far.  
A didn't have                      B don't have                      C haven't had
3. Linda has lost her passport again. It's the second time this  
A has happened                      B happens                      C happened
4. You're out of breath. \_\_\_\_\_?  
A Are you running                      B Have you run                      C Have you been running
5. Where's the book I gave you? What \_\_\_\_\_ with it?  
A have you done                      B have you been doing                      C are you doing
6. We're good friends. We \_\_\_\_\_ each other for a long-time.  
A know                      B have known                      C have been knowing                      D knew
7. Sally has been working here \_\_\_\_\_.  
A for six months                      B since six months                      C six months ago
8. It's two years \_\_\_\_\_ Joe.  
A that I don't see                      B that I haven't seen                      C since I didn't see                      D since I saw
9. They \_\_\_\_\_ out after lunch and they've just come back.  
A went                      B have gone                      C are gone
10. The Chinese \_\_\_\_\_ printing.  
A invented                      B have invented                      C had invented
11. Ian \_\_\_\_\_ in Scotland for ten years. Now he lives in London.  
A lived                      B has lived                      C has been living
12. The man sitting next to me on the plane was nervous because he \_\_\_\_\_ before.  
A hasn't flown                      B didn't fly                      C hadn't flown                      D wasn't flying
13. \_\_\_\_\_ a car when they were living in London?  
A Had they                      B Did they have                      C Were they having                      D Have they had
14. I \_\_\_\_\_ television a lot but I don't any more.  
A was watching                      B was used to watch                      C used to watch

## Future.

1. \_\_\_\_\_ tomorrow, so we can go out somewhere.  
A I'm not working                      B I don't work                      C I won't work
2. That bag looks heavy. \_\_\_\_\_ you with it.  
A I'm helping                      B I help                      C I'll help
3. I think the weather \_\_\_\_\_ be nice later.  
A will                      B shall                      C is going to
4. "Ann is in hospital." "Yes, I know. \_\_\_\_\_ her tomorrow."  
A I visit                      B I'm going to visit                      C I'll visit
5. We're late. The film \_\_\_\_\_ by the time we get to the cinema.  
A will already start                      B will be already started                      C will already have started
6. Don't worry \_\_\_\_\_ late tonight.  
A if I am                      B when I am                      C when I'll be                      D if I'll be

## Упр. 39. Выберите вариант ответа, который вы считаете правильным

1. The famous book by Frederick W. Taylor Scientific Management \_\_\_\_\_ in 1947.  
A had been written                      B has been written                      C was written                      D is written
2. Over the last thirty years, a new approach to management \_\_\_\_\_.  
A has been developing                      B is developing                      C is developed                      D was developed
3. Jack Richards left the company he \_\_\_\_\_ with for ten years in order to set up his own business.  
A has worked                      B had worked                      C has been working                      D have worked
4. "Shirley used to exercise a lot, didn't she?"  
"Yes, she had \_\_\_\_\_ exercises every day until last month."  
A been done                      B doing                      C been doing                      D did
5. "Why do you ask if I \_\_\_\_\_?"  
"Because you smell of cigarettes."

A had smoked    B smoked    C have been smoking    D had been smoking

6. Hurry up. The train\_\_\_\_\_in a minute.

A leaves    B left    C will leave    D will be leaving

7. \_\_\_\_\_you\_\_\_\_\_, \_ any interesting films lately?

A have ... seen    B did ... see    C do ... see    D will... see

8. We\_\_\_\_\_IO live in the country, but now we live in town.

A used    B got used    C were used    D use

9. I usually read the newspaper while I\_\_\_\_\_for the bus.

A wait    B am waiting    C have waited    D have been waiting

10. Refrigerating meats \_\_\_\_\_the spread of bacteria.

A retards    B retarding    C to retard    D is retarded

11. The team\_\_\_\_\_the experiment by September.

A will carry out    B will be carried out    C will have carried out    D will be carrying out

12. The plane was so heavily loaded that it could not\_\_\_\_\_.

A arouse    B raise    C rise    d arise

13. Since 1965 many measurements of the microwave background\_\_\_\_\_

A have been made    B were made    C had been made    D are being made

14. If costs\_\_\_\_\_, profit margins necessarily contract.

A rise    B raise    C raised    D are to rise

15. A firm should always compare the cost of the alteration of its product with the cost of lost sales if no alteration\_\_\_\_\_.

A will be made    B is made    C were made    D was made

16. These aggressive exporters are willing to take short losses in the belief that in the long run, once their position in export markets\_\_\_\_\_, their costs will be lowered and they will be able to earn excess returns.

A has been established    B was established    C were established    D will be established

17. Look up, the storm clouds\_\_\_\_\_.

A form    B are formed    C are being formed    D are forming

18. Even before the end of the 2nd World War, there\_\_\_\_\_considerable planning for the post-war economic system.  
A has been            B was            C had to be            D had been
19. I\_\_\_\_\_my paper shortly.  
A have written            B wrote            C will write            D am writing
20. He has been to London\_\_\_\_\_.  
A formerly            B lately            C not long ago            D recent

## ГЛАВА 6. ПРЯМАЯ И КОСВЕННАЯ РЕЧЬ. ПРАВИЛО СОГЛАСОВАНИЯ ВРЕМЕН. ТИПЫ ВЫСКАЗЫВАНИЙ. ГЛАГОЛЫ РЕЧИ

### 6.1. Прямая и косвенная речь

Косвенную речь используют тогда, когда хотят избежать цитирования. С грамматической точки зрения предложения с косвенной речью - это сложные предложения, в которых придаточное предложение является дополнением. Сказуемым главного предложения часто является глагол речи (*say, tell, report*) или умственной активности (*know, believe, wonder*). Дополнительное придаточное предложение может вводиться с помощью союза *that, wh-words, или if/ whether*:

*The Dean said **that** science courses required a laboratory period.*

*The professor explained **how** shock waves are formed.*

*Do you know **which** answer is correct?*

Главное предложение никогда не отделяется от придаточного запятой; знак препинания в конце предложения определяется типом высказывания главного предложения: точкой в случае утверждения и вопросительным знаком в случае вопроса.

### 6.2. Правило согласования времен

Правило согласования времен запрещает использовать в придаточном дополнительном предложении формы настоящего и будущего время, если в главном предложении сказуемое выражено глаголом в одном из прошедших времен. В таблице показано, каким образом обычно изменяются времена при переходе от прямой речи к косвен-



ной в этом случае.

Прямая речь	Косвенная речь
Present Simple ("I live")	Past Simple (He said he lived)
Present Contin. ("I am living")	Past Contin. (He said he was living)
Present Perfect ("I have lived")	Past Perfect (He said he had lived)
Present Perfect Contin. ("I have been living")	Past Perfect Contin. (He said he had been living)
Past Simple ("I lived")	Past Perfect (He said he had lived)
Past Contin. ("I was living")	Past Perfect Contin. (He said he had been living)
Going to (Future) ("I am going to live")	Was going (He said he was going to live)
Will- Future Simple ("I will live")	Would (He said he would live)
Can ("I can live")	Could (He said he could live)
May ("I may live")	Might (He said he might live)
Must ("I must live")	Had to (He said he had to live)

**Указатели времени меняются следующим образом:**

Прямая речь	Косвенная речь
«today»	that day
«now»	then
«here»	there
«this»	that
«tonight»	that night
«tomorrow (night)»	the next / following day (night)
«next week»	the following week
«last week»	the previous week

«yesterday»	the previous day
«ago»	previously / before

Если сказуемое в главном предложении употреблено в настоящем или будущем времени (Present Simple, Present Perfect, Future Simple), в придаточном предложении сохраняется то время глагола, которое требуется по смыслу, т.е. соответствует тому времени, в каком было сделано высказывание в прямой речи.

*Scientists agree that global warming is a serious problem. Measurements have indicated that the average temperature of the earth has risen in the past one hundred years. Further research will prove that carbon dioxide is largely responsible.*

**Упр. 1.** Преобразуйте высказывания в косвенную речь.

- "I've attended two conferences this year." He stated \_\_\_\_\_
- "I've visited several genetic laboratories." He said \_\_\_\_\_
- "I've seen a lot of interesting things." He mentioned \_\_\_\_\_
- "I'm planning to visit Oxford." He hopes \_\_\_\_\_
- "I'm hoping to go to Scotland." He says \_\_\_\_\_
- "I'm writing my thesis now." He replied \_\_\_\_\_
- "I'm studying an interesting problem." He believes \_\_\_\_\_
- "My paper will consist of four sections." He said \_\_\_\_\_

**Упр. 2.** Преобразуйте высказывания в косвенную речь, используя модальные глаголы.

- "I can ring the Bank Manager." She said \_\_\_\_\_
- "I may go abroad." She said \_\_\_\_\_
- "We must observe the experimental conditions." He pointed out \_\_\_\_\_
- "I can't promise you my assistance in this matter". He told me \_\_\_\_\_
- "I may not be able to send you a copy of my paper shortly." He warned me \_\_\_\_\_
- "I must think about it." He said \_\_\_\_\_
- "I can't do anything about it tonight." He warned \_\_\_\_\_

8. "I must write an account of my work."

He realized\_\_\_\_\_

**Упр 3.** Преобразуйте высказывания в прямую речь, используя требуемые по контексту модальные глаголы *must, mustn't, needn't, ought to, had better*.

1. There's a fantastic film on at the Odeon. Advise your friend to see it before it's too late.
2. Tell your friend not to drive her car till it's insured.
3. You are going to play tennis with a friend at the tennis club. Tell him it isn't necessary for him to bring any tennis balls as the club supplies them.
4. Your friend has just received his bank statement. He's sure it's incorrect. Advise him to telephone the bank.
5. Tell your Venezuelan friend that she needs a visa to go to France.

**Упр. 4.** Переведите на английский язык, соблюдая правило согласования времен.

1. Мы вчера узнали, что она больна.
2. Он думал, что она не придет в школу.
3. Я знал, что моя сестра изучает французский язык, и думал, что она поедет в Париж.
4. Мне сказали, что ты мне звонил.
5. Я думал, что ты в Москве.
6. Я не знал, что ты уже вернулся в Санкт-Петербург.
7. Я боялся, что заблужусь в лесу.
8. Она знала, что мы никогда не видели ее картины.
9. Ученый был уверен, что найдет решение проблемы.
10. Я знал, что ты приехал в Санкт-Петербург, и полагал, что ты наведишь меня.
11. Мы не думали, что он так рассердится.
12. Мы надеялись, что поедem в Лондон.
13. Учитель сказал, что наши друзья прислали письмо из Лондона.
14. Она сказала, что ее подруга пригласила ее в театр.
15. Мы боялись, что не купим билета в театр.
16. Мы увидели, что дети играют в песке.
17. Она сказала, что больше не будет купаться, потому что вода холодная.
18. Мой дедушка сказал, что в молодости он любил кататься на коньках.
19. Моя двоюродная сестра сказала, что любит оперу и будет рада пойти с нами в театр, хотя уже дважды слушала "Травиату."

**Упр. 5.** Переведите на английский язык, соблюдая правило согласо-

вания времен.

1. Все были уверены, что Борис хорошо сдаст экзамены. 2. Он говорил, что Лев Толстой его любимый писатель. 3. Я знал, что вы живете в Москве, но не знал вашего адреса. 4. Он сказал, что бросит курить. 5. Все знали, что она поедет в Рим. 6. Простите, мы не думали, что вы ждете нас. 7. Я не знал, что вы тоже любите футбол. 8. Я был уверен, что он будет выдающимся артистом. 9. Я боялся, что вы не последуете моему совету. 10. Я думал, что он подождет меня. 11. Я не знал, что ты будешь работать в читальном зале. 12. Он боялся, что ему будет трудно сделать доклад. 13. Он сказал нам, что когда он вошел в комнату, его друг уже сидел на диване. Он читал газету. 14. Мы надеялись, что она скоро придет. 15. Он сказал, что не знает, когда начнется конференция. 16. Я был уверен, что если мы поспешим, мы не опоздаем на поезд. 17. Он спросил меня, что я буду делать вечером. Я ответил, что не знаю, буду ли я свободен вечером, но сказал, что если буду свободен, то позвоню ему часов в восемь.

**Упр. 6.** Переведите на английский язык, соблюдая правило согласования времен.

1. Сестра сказала, что хочет приехать к нам сама. 2. Я знала, что она очень занята. 3. Никто не знал, что вы ждете здесь. Пойдемте в дом. 4. Гид предупредил нас, что в этой части города движение довольно сильное. 5. Секретарь не заметил, что директор с кем-то разговаривает. 6. Все мы знали, что ее семья опять в Санкт-Петербурге. 7. Лена сказала, что она дарит нам эту картину. 8. Я знала, что она работает на заводе, что у нее есть муж и двое детей, что семья у нее очень дружная и она счастлива. 9. Она сказала, что ее коллеги всегда дают ей прекрасные советы. 10. Он сказал, что любит эту пьесу. 11. В прошлом году они думали, что никогда не будут хорошо читать по-английски, но вчера они увидели, что читают тексты довольно хорошо. 12. Он сказал мне вчера, что его отец — профессор и живет в Москве. 13. Он сказал мне вчера, что раньше он учился в университете. 14. Мы решили на прошлой неделе, что будущим летом мы все поедem в Крым.

## Отклонения от правила согласования времен

Случаи отклонения от правила согласования времен:

- в определительных придаточных предложениях, а также придаточных причинных и сравнительных предложениях глагол может употребляться во временах Present и Future: *My brother **told** me about the book which you **are reading**. He **was not able** to translate the article because he **does not know** English well enough. He **refused** to go to the theatre as he **will have** an examination in Economics in a few days. It **was not so cold** yesterday as it **is** today.*

- глаголы **must, should** и **ought** (в случае выражения приказа или совета) употребляются в придаточном предложении независимо от того, в каком времени стоит глагол главного предложения: *He **tells (told)** us that we **mustn't** cross the road against the red light. He **says (said)** that I **ought to** send her a telegram at once. I **tell (told)** him that he **should** consult a doctor.*

- форма Present сослагательного наклонения употребляется независимо от того, в каком времени стоит глагол главного предложения: *It is (was) necessary that he send us the documents.*

- глагол в дополнительном придаточном предложении выражает общеизвестный факт: *Galileo **proved** that the earth **moves (moved)** round the sun.*

- в научной и технической литературе после глаголов типа to believe, to assume, to suggest, to express, to maintain, и т.д., которые по своему значению не констатируют общеизвестную истину, а указывают на предположительные факты: *The author suggested that the main valency chains of lignin **are built up** by a repeating 2-ring system.*

**Упр. 7.** Поставьте глаголы в скобках в нужном по контексту времени.

1. They held that this observation\_\_\_\_(show) the reaction to be intermolecular. 2. Kelner discovered that visible light\_\_\_\_(have) the remarkable ability of restoring viability. 3. It was noticed that some water\_\_\_\_(distill) at the beginning of the distillation. 4. It was supposed that hydrate formation\_\_\_\_(play) a part in the aqueous polymerization. 5. He was modeling the simplest possible chemical reaction - hydrogen exchange in which

a hydrogen atom\_\_\_\_(slam) into a hydrogen molecule and\_\_\_\_ (replace) one of its two atoms. 6. It was found that other derivatives\_\_\_\_(not result) in higher yields. 7. He established the formula of the alcohol and suggested that saponification of the ester (under rather drastic conditions)\_\_\_\_ (proceed) as follows. 8. It was shown that the velocity constant\_\_\_\_(be) unaffected by an increase in viscosity of the reacting mixture of over 2,000 fold.

### 6.3. Повелительные конструкции в косвенной речи

Повелительные конструкции в косвенной речи выражаются через инфинитив. Отрицательная форма повелительного наклонения **do not** заменяется инфинитивом с частицей **not**.

Просьбы в косвенной речи можно передать двумя способами:

- используя **if**: *"Will you move over please, Jim?" - He asked Jim if he would move over.*

- с помощью инфинитива с частицей **to**: *He asked Jim to move over.*

**Упр. 8.** Преобразуйте высказывания в косвенную речь, используя глагол *to tell* в случае приказа и глагол *to ask* в случае просьбы.

Пример: *"Come into the sitting-room."* - *She told (asked) me to come into the sitting room.*

*"Don't go there."* - *She told (asked) me not to go there.*

1. *"Don't sit down by the window."*
2. *"Ring me this evening."* с *"Look in the cupboard."*
3. *"Take a couple of aspirins."* bought it."
4. *"Pour yourself another whisky."* f *"Don't be late, please."*
5. *"Ask at the station."*
6. *"Have another piece of cake."*
7. *"Write to Head Office about it."*
8. *"Take it back to the shop where you*
9. *"Explain to them what happened."*
10. *"Don't open the book."*

**Упр. 9.** Преобразуйте высказывания в косвенную речь.

1. "If you see him ask him to ring me", she said.
2. "When you are driving away look into your driving mirror before turning right", said my instructor.
3. "Get the car off the road or to the verge if you have a puncture. Don't leave it on the road", said my father.
4. "If the lift should stop between two floors press the emergency button", he said.
10. "If you don't like the programme switch to another channel", I said to her.

**Упр. 10.** Передайте следующие повелительные предложения в косвенной речи.

1. "Go home," said the teacher to us.
2. "Buy some meat in the shop," said my mother to me.
3. "Sit down at the table and do your homework," said my mother to me.
4. "Don't forget to clean your teeth," said granny to Helen.
5. "Don't sit up late," said the doctor to Mary.
6. The doctor said to Pete: "Don't go for a walk today."
7. "Don't eat too much ice-cream," said Nick's mother to him.
8. "Explain to me how to solve this problem," said my friend to me.
9. The doctor said to Nick: "Open your mouth and show me your tongue."
10. "Don't be afraid of my dog," said the man to Kate.
11. "Take this book and read it," said the librarian to the boy.

**Упр. 11.** Передайте следующие повелительные предложения в косвенной речи.

1. He said to us: "Come here tomorrow."
2. I said to Mike: "Send me a telegram as soon as you arrive."
3. Father said to me: "Don't stay there long."
4. Peter said to them: "Don't leave the room until I come back."
5. "Take my luggage to Room 145," he said to the porter.
6. He said to me: "Ring me up tomorrow."
7. "Bring me a cup of black coffee," she said to the waiter.
8. "Don't be late for dinner," said other to us.
9. Jane said to us: "Please tell me all you know about it."
10. She said to Nick: "Please don't say anything about it to your sister."
11. The teacher said to me: "Hand this note to your parents, please."
12. Oleg said to his sister: "Put the letter into

an envelope and give it to Kate." 13. "Please help me with this work, Henry," said Robert. 14. "Please bring me some fish soup," he said to the waitress, 15. "Don't worry over such a small thing," she said to me. 16. "Please don't mention it to anybody," Mary said to her friend. 17. "Promise to come and see me," said Jane to Alice.

#### 6.4. Глаголы речи

Более точное значение или оттенок сказанного могут быть переданы в косвенной речи выбором соответствующего глагола речи. Следует иметь в виду, что кроме предложенных ниже в упражнениях, можно использовать и такие глаголы как *to beg, to instruct, to claim, to demand, to offer, to promise, to refuse, to threaten, to admit, to suggest, to scream, to whisper, to stammer, to mumble to swear, to yell, to boast, to sigh* и ряд других.

**Упр. 12.** Заполните пропуски глаголами *to say, to tell, to speak, to talk* и *to address* в прошедшем времени.

1. The boy\_\_\_\_\_me his name.
2. The head of the state\_\_\_\_\_on the television last night. He\_\_\_\_\_all the people.
3. She\_\_\_\_\_it in French. She\_\_\_\_\_good French.
4. John and I\_\_\_\_\_on different subjects.
5. I\_\_\_\_\_ "Good-bye" to them and left.
6. Professor Sedov\_\_\_\_\_at the congress.
7. The friends\_\_\_\_\_about their future investigation.
8. The foreigner\_\_\_\_\_us in Italian.
9. Bob \_\_\_\_\_me the time.

**Упр. 13.** Заполните пропуски нужной по контексту формой глаголов из списка.

**say    tell    explain    speak    talk    reply**

I met Mr Brown in the street the other day, and we stopped and (a)\_\_\_\_\_for a while. He (b)\_\_\_\_\_me that his wife had been taken into hospital. When I asked him how she was, he (c)\_\_\_\_\_that she was



getting better. He wondered why I hadn't been to the tennis club for a few months, so I (d)\_\_\_\_\_that I'd been very busy lately and just hadn't had time. "There is something you must (e)\_\_\_\_\_me," he said. "How many languages can your son (f)\_\_\_\_\_?" "Four," I (g)\_\_\_\_\_. "Why?" "I know your son has some very funny stories to (h)\_\_\_\_\_about learning languages and living abroad. We're having a meeting of the Travellers Club next week, and I'd like him to (i)\_\_\_\_\_at it". I (j)\_\_\_\_\_I would (k)\_\_\_\_\_to my son about it, and promised to get back in touch. Then we (l)\_\_\_\_\_goodbye and went our separate ways.

**Упр. 14.** Преобразуйте высказывания в косвенную речь, используя каждый глагол из предложенных один раз.

**ask tell warn urge remind invite persuade advise**

1. "I think you should accept the pay rise," Sir Albert Pringle said to the shipbuilder's leader.
2. "We really must stay united," Peter Arkwright said to his members.
3. "Don't forget to come to the meeting," Sir Albert said to his secretary.
4. "Be careful of the press, They often make mistakes," said a colleague to Peter Arkwright.
5. "I think we should return to work," said Peter. "Well, if you think it's a good idea, we agree," said shipbuilders.
6. "Please reconsider this offer," Sir Albert said to Mr Arkwright.
7. "Stop work!" Peter Arkwright said to the builders.
8. "Have lunch with me," said Sir Albert to Peter.

**Упр. 15.** Передайте следующие повествовательные предложения в косвенной речи. Употребляйте любое существительное или местоимение в роли подлежащего главного предложения.

1. I shall do it now if you like.
2. My brother was here today.
3. It's a pity you didn't come earlier.
4. There will be an interesting lecture at the school assembly-hall tomorrow. One- of our teachers will speak about Charles Dickens.
5. Last year I spent my summer vacation in the Caucasus.
6. I

came to live in this town several years ago. 7. I have read all about it in to-day's newspaper. 8. They finished building this house only last week. 9. Five years ago there were no people living here at all. 10. I shall go skiing on Sunday if I have time. 11. It will be so pleasant when Tom comes home. 12. I shall come as soon as I am ready. 13. You will know that I have gone to the concert if I am not at home by eight. 14. I shall come to the Philharmonic with you if you get tickets. 15. I'll be reading you a story until it is time to go to bed.

**Упр. 16.** Передайте следующие повествовательные предложения в косвенной речи.

1. "When I get a job, I'll buy you a warm coat," said the boy's father. 2. "If you spill the milk, there won't be any for the cat," said my mother to me. 3. "When you come to see me on Sunday, I shall show you my new dress," she said to me. 4. "If Mary arrives before seven, bring her to our house for the evening," said Jane to Henry. 5. "When your turn comes, listen very carefully to what the doctor tells you," I said to my grandmother. 6. "If you are in a hurry, we shall make only the first experiment," said the laboratory assistant to me. 7. "I shan't start anything new until I have finished this novel," said the writer to the correspondent. 8. "Don't wait until I come. As soon as you finish the exercises, begin playing volleyball," said the PE teacher to the pupils. 9. "As soon as Robert appears, ask him where he put the dictionary," said Mary to her mother.

**Упр. 17.** Восстановите прямую речь в следующих предложениях.

1. He said that while crossing the English Channel they had stayed on deck all the time. 2. The woman said she had felt sick while crossing the Channel. 3. She said she was feeling bad that day. 4. Tom said he would go to see the doctor the next day. 5. He told me he was ill. 6. He told me he had fallen ill. 7. They told me that Tom had not come to school the day before. 8. I told my sister that she might catch cold. 9. She told me she had caught cold. 10. The old man told the doctor that he had pain in his right side. 11. He said he had just been examined by a good doctor. 12. He said he would not come to school until Monday. 13. The man said he had spent a month

at a health-resort. 14. He said that his health had greatly improved since then.

### 6.5. Вопросы в косвенной речи

При обращении специального вопроса в косвенную речь производятся следующие изменения: вопросительный знак опускается; вопросительное слово становится союзом, соединяющим главное и придаточное предложения; вопросительный порядок слов заменяется порядком слов повествовательного предложения; соблюдается правило согласования времен.

Общие вопросы в косвенной речи требуют соединительного союза "ли" – *if* или *whether* между главным и придаточным предложениями. Порядок слов прямой, правило согласования времен используется, если сказуемое главного предложения употреблено в прошедшем времени.

**Упр. 18.** Задайте специальные вопросы в косвенной речи.

Пример: "Where do you live?"                      *She asked (me) where I lived.*

1. "How many bedrooms are there?"
2. "When do you want to move in?"
3. "What sort of heating is there?"
4. "How often do you want the rent?"
5. "How far is it to the shops?"
6. "What do you think of the flat?"
7. "Where have you been today?"
8. "What have you been buying?"
9. "Where do you intend to go tomorrow?"
10. "Why don't you learn Spanish?"
11. "Where are you going for your holidays?"
12. "When I see him, what shall I say?"

**Упр. 19.** Задайте общие вопросы в косвенной речи

Пример: "Are you a student?"                      *She asked me if I was a student.*

1. "Do you want to go abroad?"
2. "Do you think it will be possible to get a job abroad?"

3. "Do you intend to go to Germany?"
4. "Are you going to answer any advertisements?"
5. "Is there a chance you might continue with your studies?"
6. "Is John trying to get a job?"
7. "Have you been to the Labour Exchange?"
8. "Aren't you tired of doing nothing?"
9. "Haven't you got any plans at all?"
10. "Are you definitely going to leave home?"

**Упр. 20.** Преобразуйте прямую речь в косвенную

1. "I can't turn this screw," said Ann. "Will you do it for me?"
2. "Would you tighten the bolt?" said Ann, handing me a spanner.
3. "Would you mind discussing this question at the seminar?"
4. "Shall I explain my recent results?"
5. "Will you help me with translating the article please?"

**Упр. 21.** Задайте вопросы в прямой речи.

### **The job interview**

1. The interviewer asked Bill why he wanted to change his job.
2. First the interviewer wondered if Bill is pleased with his job.
3. He needed to know what sort of translation Bill had ever been engaged in.
4. He was interested in how much Bill would like to get for his job.
5. He asked why Bill thought the company might be interested in hiring him.
6. He wanted to know what Bill's career goals were.
7. He doubted if Bill was qualified enough for the job.
8. He asked if Bill could prove his experience with letters of recommendation from his previous job.

**Упр. 22.** Передайте следующие специальные вопросы в косвенной речи, начиная каждое предложение со слов, данных в скобках.

1. Where is he going? (He didn't tell anybody...)
2. Where has he gone? (Did you know...)
3. Where is he? (Did you know...)
4. When is he leaving

school? (I wanted to know...) 5. Where does he live? (Nobody knew...) 6. When will he come back? (She asked them...) 7. Where did she buy this hat? (He wanted to know...) 8. How much did she pay for it? (I had no idea...) 9. Where did I put the book? (I forgot...) 10. Who has given you this nice kitten? (She wanted to know...) 11. Where can I buy an English-Russian dictionary? (He asked me...) 12. How long will it take your brother to get to Madrid? (He wondered...)

**Упр. 23.** Передайте следующие общие вопросы в косвенной речи.

1. I said to Boris: "Does your friend live in London?" 2. I said to the man: "Are you living in a hotel?" 3. Nick said to his friend: "Will you stay at the 'Hilton'?" 4. He said to me: "Do you often go to see your friends?" 5. He said to me "Will you see your friends before you leave St. Petersburg?" 6. Mike said to Jane: "Will you come to the railway station to see me off?" 7. She said to me: "Have you sent them a telegram?" 8. She said to me: "Did you send them a telegram yesterday?" 9. I said to Mike: "Have you packed your suitcase?" 10. I said to Kate: "Did anybody meet you at the station?" 11. I said to her: "Can you give me their address?" 12. I asked Tom: "Have you had breakfast?" 13. I asked my sister: "Will you stay at home or go for a walk after dinner?" 14. I said to my mother: "Did anybody come to see me?" 15. I asked my sister: "Will Nick call for you on the way to school?" 16. She said to the young man: "Can you call a taxi for me?" 17. Mary said to Peter: "Have you shown your photo to Dick?" 18. Oleg said to me: "Will you come here tomorrow?" 19. He said to us: "Did you go to the museum this morning?"

**Упр. 24.** Передайте следующие общие вопросы в косвенной речи, начиная каждое предложение со слов, данных в скобках.

1. Have you found the book? (She asked me...) 2. Are there any more books here? (The man asked...) 3. Did she go shopping yesterday (I wanted to know...) 4. Has she bought the dictionary? (He did not ask her...) 5. Does she know the name of the man? (I doubted...) 6. Did Boris see the man this morning? (I asked...) 7. Have they sold the picture? (I did not know...) 8. Do they know anything about it? (I wondered...) 9. Has Jack

given you his telephone number? (She asked me...) 10. Is he coming back today? (I was not sure...)

**Упр. 25.** Передайте следующие вопросительные предложения в косвенной речи.

1. The teacher said to Mike: "Does your father work at a factory?" 2. Mother said to us: "What are you doing here?" 3. Father said to Nick: "Have you done your homework?" 4. Tom said: "Ann, where are your friends?" 5. Kate said: "Mike, do you like my dress?" 6. Grandfather said to Mary: "What mark did you get at school?" 7. My sister said to me: "Will you take me to the theatre with you tomorrow?" 8. Mother asked me: "Did you play with your friends yesterday?" 9. "Why don't you play with your friends, Kate?" said her mother. 10. "Do you like chocolates?" said my little sister to me. 11. "Did you see your granny yesterday, Lena?" asked Mr. Brown. 12. The doctor asked Nick: "Do you wash your face and hands every morning?"

**Упр. 26.** Восстановите прямую речь в следующих предложениях.

1. I asked if they had taken the sick man to hospital. 2. I asked my friend if he had a headache. 3. I wanted to know when he had fallen ill. 4. I wondered if he had taken his temperature. 5. I asked him if the doctor had given him some medicine. I asked him if he was feeling better now. 6. I asked the man how long he had been in St. Petersburg. 7. I asked him if he was going to a health-resort. 8. We asked the girl if her father was still in Moscow. 9. I asked the girl what sort of work her father did.

### Обзорные упражнения

**Упр. 27.** Прочитайте текст. Заполните пропуски определительными придаточными предложениями, из предложенного списка.

I had a most strange experience a few weeks ago. I was sitting at home, when at about nine o'clock there was a knock on the door. I wasn't expecting anyone, so I wondered (a)\_\_\_\_\_. I opened the door, and there was this man, wearing an old raincoat. I asked him (b)\_\_\_\_\_, but he didn't tell

me at first. He wanted to know (c) \_\_\_\_\_ in the house, which I thought was an odd question. Anyway, I said I was, because everyone else had gone out for the evening. Then he asked (d) \_\_\_\_\_, so I said that I wanted to know who he was before I'd let him into my house, which is only natural, after all. Anyway, he didn't answer, but looked up and down the street. By this time I was getting a bit worried, and I wondered (e) \_\_\_\_\_, because this chap seemed a bit suspicious. But he told me (f) \_\_\_\_\_. He was a policeman, *and* he showed me his car *improve* it. He said that the police were watching the people who lived in a house a few doors away, and he asked me (g) \_\_\_\_\_. I said I didn't. I'd seen them a few times, but I hadn't spoken to them. Then he wanted to know (h) \_\_\_\_\_, so I said 'a few weeks'. I'd seen their furniture van on the day they moved in. Then he explained (i) \_\_\_\_\_. He asked me if he could stay in my front room and watch the street for a while, so I showed him in. I asked him (j) \_\_\_\_\_, and he said it was because they suspected of being drug smugglers. I couldn't believe it. He stayed for three hours, and then left. Anyway, a few days later, I read in the paper that the police had arrested them.

1. if I knew them
2. if he could come in
3. why he was watching them
4. who it could be
5. who he was
6. what he wanted
7. if I should call the police
8. if I was alone
9. what he wanted to do
10. how long they'd been living there

**Упр. 28.** Исправьте ошибки, связанные с нарушением правила согласования времен и пунктуации, в следующем тексте. В общей сложности Вы должны сделать 21 исправление.

## A College Lecture

'Professor Sanchez gave a lecture on transistors last Tuesday. <sup>2</sup>First, he explained what are translators. <sup>3</sup>He said, that they are very small electronic devices used in telephones, automobiles, radios, and so on. <sup>4</sup>He further explained that transistors control the flow of electronic current in electronic equipment. <sup>5</sup>He wanted to know which popular technological invention cannot operate without transistors. <sup>6</sup>Most students agreed, it is the personal computer. <sup>7</sup>Professor Sanchez then asked if the students know how do transistors function in computers. <sup>8</sup>He said that the transistors were etched into tiny silicon microchips and that these transistors increase computers' speed and data storage capacity. <sup>9</sup>Then he asked the class when had transistors been invented? <sup>10</sup>Sergei guessed that they were invented in 1947. <sup>11</sup>The professor said that he is correct. <sup>12</sup>Professor Sanchez then asked what was the importance of this invention? <sup>13</sup>Many students answered that it is the beginning of the information age. <sup>14</sup>At the end of the lecture, the professor assigned a paper on transistors. <sup>15</sup>He requested that each student chooses a topic by next Monday. <sup>16</sup>He suggested that the papers are typed.

**Упр. 29.** Переведите на английский язык. Сравните конструкцию повествовательных и повелительных предложений в прямой и косвенной речи.

1. Мой друг сказал: "Все ученики нашего класса любят уроки истории." 2. Я сказал ему: "Мы любим уроки английского языка." 3. Учительница сказала: "Скоро вы будете хорошо говорить по-английски, так как вы много работаете." 4. Мама сказала: "Не шумите! Дедушка спит." 5. Катя сказала: "Папа в комнате. Он читает." 6. Учитель сказал: "Я уже проверил вашу контрольную работу." 7. Аня сказала: "Мы нашли в лесу много грибов." 8. Мой друг сказал, что все ученики их класса любят уроки истории. 9. Я сказал ему, что мы любим уроки английского языка. 10. Учительница сказала, что скоро мы будем хорошо говорить по-английски, так как мы много работаем. 11. Мама сказала нам, чтобы мы не шумели, так как дедушка спит. 12. Катя сказала, что папа в комнате и что он читает. 13. Учитель сказал, что он уже проверил нашу контрольную работу. 14. Аня сказала, что



они нашли в лесу много грибов.

**Упр. 30.** Переведите на английский язык. Сравните конструкцию вопросительных предложений в прямой и косвенной речи.

1. Вчера наш учитель спросил нас: "Много ли вы читаете?" 2. Когда он увидел у меня в руках "Дэвида Копперфильда", он спросил: "Где вы взяли эту книгу?" Потом он спросил: "Знаете ли вы что-нибудь об авторе этой книги?" 4. Миша спросил меня: "Когда ты пойдешь покупать книги?" 1. Вчера наш учитель спросил нас, много ли мы читаем. 2. Когда он увидел у меня в руках "Дэвида Копперфильда", он спросил, где я взял эту книгу. 3. Потом он спросил, знаю ли я что-нибудь об авторе этой книги. 4. Миша спросил меня, когда я пойду покупать книги.

**Упр. 31.** Передайте следующие предложения косвенной речи.

1. "Why do you help him?" said Alec to us. "He is lazy. He can do everything himself." 2. "I don't want to go to the zoo. I was there last week with my cousin and saw all the animals," said Lena. 3. "Look at my stamps, father," said Nick. "When will you buy some new ones for me?" 4. "I can't do this exercise: it is too difficult," said Tanya. "Why didn't you ask your teacher to explain it?" said her brother. 5. "Can you see the lights over there in the distance?" said the lighthouse keeper. "Yes, I can," said his assistant. "A ship is giving signals." 6. "Did you run a race yesterday?" said Peter. "Yes, we did," said Ann. "Tamara was the first to come to the finish." 7. "Where is my bag, mother?" asked Tom. "I have put it on the chair near the door," said his mother. "Don't forget to put your record-book into it." 8. "Why can't we play here, mother?" asked the children. "Father is sleeping," said their mother. "He has worked very much today. Keep quiet."

*Обратите внимание на передачу следующих конструкций в косвенной речи*

*"Let's play chess," said Nick. — Nick suggested playing chess. "All right," said Pete. — Pete agreed. "Oh no," said Mike. — Mike refused.*

**Упр. 32.** Передайте следующие ниже предложения в косвенной речи.

1. "Let's play badminton," said Nina. "All right," said Mike. "I like to play badminton very much."
2. "Let's run a race," said Bill. "No," said Jack. "I hurt my foot three days ago and now I cannot run."
3. "Will you show me your new flat?" said Tom. "Of course," said Becky. "Come to our place tomorrow."
4. "I shall go to see my friend tomorrow," said Kate. "Will you come with me?" "Yes, I shall," said Pete. "I want to see your friend."
5. "Does your friend always come to school so early?" said Victor. "No," said Mary. "She came so early this morning because she is on duty today."
6. "There is a new film on at our cinema," said Lena. "Let's go and see it." "No, I can't," said Mike. "I shall be busy."
7. "What shall we do with Nick?" said Ann. "He has got a bad mark again." "Let's help him with his Russian," said Pete. "I am sure we can do it."

**Упр. 33.** Передайте следующие предложения в косвенной речи.

1. He said: "We have forgotten to take the ball!"
2. She said: "I shall be very glad to see you."
3. "Let's go to the Philharmonic. There is a good concert there tonight," said Walter. "Oh, very good," said Robert. "I haven't been to the Philharmonic for a long time."
4. Alec asked me: "Have you ever been to the National Gallery?" "Yes, I have," said I. "I visited it last year when we were staying in London."
5. Nellie said "Yesterday I went to see Paul, but he was not at home." "Let's go to see him today," said Nick. "I think he will be at home." "No," said Nellie, "I can't go today, I am very busy."
6. He said: "Who is this man? I don't know him."
7. I thought: "He is a very clever man: he can help me."
8. My brother said: "In two hours I shall have finished my work and then I shall go to the cinema." Then he said to me: "Let's go together." "All right," I said.
9. The teacher said: "Open your books and begin reading the new text."
10. The girl asked: "What is the price of this dress?"
11. "Please help me with this problem, I cannot solve it," I said to my father. "All right," said my father, "let's try to solve it together."
12. "Let's go to Finland for the winter holidays," said Kate. "No," said Andrew, "we have already been to Finland. Let's go to Greece. It will be very interesting to see the country we have read about so

much." "All right," said Kate, "let's go."

**Упр. 34.** Передайте следующие предложения в косвенной речи.

1. "That's enough," said Tom's mother, "he will never go there again. I shall see to it." 2. "Who will read the next story?" asked grandmother. "It is very interesting, and I am sure you all will like it." 3. "Will you come and see me on Friday?" Lena asked her friend. "All right," said her friend, "I think I shall be free on Friday." 4. "Will you need the book for a long time?" he asked me. "I can give it to you only for a few days." 5. "Soon I shall know the whole poem perfectly," said Mary. "I have already learnt more than half of it." 6 "Will you be able to find their house without me?" said John to me "You have never been to those parts." 7. "Please don't ask me any more questions," she said to me, "I am very tired. I shall answer all your questions tomorrow." 8. "I shall finish reading the book by Monday, and then you can have it," he said to me. 9. "I haven't seen him since last year," said Lena, "and I think he has grown. Let's go and see him tomorrow." "All right," said I. "It will be interesting to see him and talk to him." 10. "Do you think it is really correct?" I asked my friend. "I am afraid you have made a mistake in one or two words."

**Упр. 35.** Восстановите прямую речь в следующих предложениях.

1. John told his friend that he had just come from the United States and intended to stay in St. Petersburg for about a month. 2. Our monitor said that he was not satisfied with his report and was going to work at it for some more time. He said that he was to make it on the twelfth of February and so he had a few days left. 3. He said that he was quite all right. The climate hadn't done him any harm. 4. A man came up and asked me where He could buy a video-cassette. 5. I asked my brother who had rung him up in the morning. 6. He told me not to call on him the next day as he would not be at home. 7. The officer ordered the soldiers to wait for him. 8. He said that he had lived in St. Petersburg for many years and knew the city very well. 9.1 told my brother that I was sorry he hadn't kept his promise.

**Упр. 36.** Передайте следующие предложения в косвенной речи.

1. "Have you got a Russian-English dictionary?" he asked me. "Can you let me have it for this evening? I must do some very difficult translation." "All right," said I. "I won't need it tonight." 2. "I thought about you last night, Lydia," said Nellie. "Have you decided to go to Omsk with your parents or will you remain here with your aunt until you finish school?" 3. "Have you done your homework or did you leave it till the evening, Bob?" asked Mike. "I thought of inviting you to go to the theatre with me, but I remembered that you nearly always do your homework in the evening." 4. "I am fond of Dickens," said Jack. "I have been reading 'The Old Curiosity Shop' the whole week. I like the novel very much. I am reading it for the second time." 5. "I think my friend has finished reading 'Jane Eyre', said Tanya. "I hope she will give it to me soon: I am eager to read it."

**Упр. 37.** Передайте следующие предложения в косвенной речи.

1. The shop-assistant said: "The shoe department is downstairs." 2. The professor said to his assistant: "You have made great progress." 3. Trip teacher said to us: "You must read this text at home." 4. Paul said: "We shall have to discuss this text tomorrow." 5. She asked me: "Do you know who has taken my book?" 6. We asked him: "What has happened to you? You look so pale!" 7. She said to me: "I hope you haven't forgotten to post the letter." 8. She asked me: "Where have you put my gloves? I cannot find them." 9. They said to me: "Try this coat on before buying it. Maybe you won't like it when you have put it on." 10. Last night I was called to the telephone. An unfamiliar voice said: "Is that Dmitri speaking? My name is Pavlov. I have come from Moscow today. I have brought some books for you from your friends I am staying at the 'Europe' Hotel. When and where can I see you?" "Let's meet at the monument to Pushkin in the Square of Arts at five o'clock if it is convenient for you," I said. "All right," he answered, "I shall be there."

## Тесты на правило согласования времен

**Упр. 38.** Выберите вариант ответа, который вы считаете правильным.

- a. "How often do you attend your English classes?" -I ask John.  
A I wonder how often does John attends his English classes.  
B I wonder how often John attends his English classes.  
C I wonder how often attends John his English classes.  
D I wonder how often John attend his English classes.
- b. "She has been unwell this week, hasn't she?"  
A I wonder if she has been unwell this week.  
B I "wonder if hasn't she been unwell this week.  
C I "wonder whether has she been unwell this week.  
D I wonder has she been unwell this week.
- c. It takes me twenty minutes to get to school.  
A I wonder how long it takes you to get to school.  
B T wonder how long does it take you to get to school.  
C I wonder how long does you take to get to school.  
D I wonder how long do take you to get to school.
- d. They say John was in Japan in September.  
A Where they say John was in September?  
B Where do they say John was in September?  
C Where do they say was John in September?  
D Where they say was John in September?
- e. "It was a long conference, wasn't it?"  
A I wonder was the conference long or short.  
B I wonder whether the conference is long or short.  
C I wonder if it was a long conference.  
D I wonder a long or short conference was.
- f. The 'Consumer Price' Index lists\_\_\_\_\_.  
A how much costs every car  
B how much does every car cost  
C how much every car costs  
D how much are every car cost
- g. Hello, Jim. I didn't expect to see you today. Sonia said you\_\_\_\_\_ill.

A are

B were

C was

D should be

h. Ann\_\_\_\_\_and left.

A said goodbye to me

B said me goodbye

C told me goodbye

j. I don't understand this sentence. Can you\_\_\_\_\_?

A explain to me this word

B explain me this word

C explain this word to me

## ГЛАВА 7. ПОРЯДОК СЛОВ

### 7.1. Порядок слов в утвердительном

#### и вопросительном предложении

Порядок слов в английском предложении имеет намного более важное значение, чем в русском. Во многих случаях он фиксирован, и мы не можем изменять его по собственному желанию. Например, из-за отсутствия падежных окончаний порядок слов является единственным средством различия между подлежащим и дополнением. Сравните два предложения:

- *Mr. William sent the boy with a message to their neighbour who lived next door.*
- *The boy sent Mr. William with a message to their neighbour who lived next door.*

Обычный порядок слов повествовательного предложения - *прямой*, что означает построение высказывания по схеме: группа подлежащего - группа сказуемого - дополнения - обстоятельства.

В ряде случаев для усиления драматического эффекта или подчеркивания значимости какого-то члена предложения (дополнения, обстоятельства) именно он может занять первое место в предложении. Например:

- *To most people* a material is a mixture of properties and substance.
- *To scientists*, materials are characterised by their microscopic structure.

Однако, если при этом группа сказуемого следует за группой подлежащего, порядок слов остается прямым, и только в случае, когда группа подлежащего следует за сказуемым, говорят об *обратном* порядке слов, или *инверсии*. Самый распространенный пример высказывания с обратным порядком слов - это вопросительное предложение (если это вопрос не к подлежащему).

**Упр. 1.** Составьте предложения из предложенных слов.

1. I/ read/ book/ go/ always/ a/ to/ before/ I/ bed.
2. I/ that/ works/ think/ Peter/ don't/ hard/ very.
3. sort/ she/ person/ the/ who/ is/ of/ will/ you/ help/ always.
4. in/ we/ school/ aren't/ smoke/ to/ allowed.
5. to/ our/ with/ friends/ us/ invited/ stay/ them.
6. phone/ had/ couldn't/ she/ lost/ him/ number/ she/ his/ because.
7. Paris/ is/ husband/ in/ next/ my/ to/ year/ going/ work.
8. don't/ I/ you/ me/ immediately/ understand/ why/ tell/ didn't.
9. carefully/ the/ I/ will/ report/ check/ in/ this/ my/ afternoon/ office.
10. have/ a/ ever/ newspaper/ morning/ English/ delivered/ to/ families/ house/ most/ their.
11. at/ once/ can/ all/ we/ questions/ your/ answer.
12. autumn/ prefer/ I/ in/ holiday/ to have/ a.
13. comes/ late/ my/ often/ elder/ home/ brother.
14. is/ lawn/ there/ a/ house/ our/ in front of
15. telegram/ her/ to/ a/ send/ he/ must.
16. advice/ always/ she/ very/ good/ gives/ me.
17. they/ mistakes/ a lot of/ make/ spelling.
18. pronunciation/ has/ she/ got/ not/ mistakes/ any/ in.
19. every/ day/ first-year/ must/ students/ work/ laboratory/ at/ the.
20. our/ great/ is/ a/ in/ country/ holiday/ May/ of/ ninth/ the.

**Упр. 2.** Задайте вопросы из предложенных слов и ответьте на них.

1. moment/ what/ you/ at/ are/ the/ wearing?
2. parents/ where/ were/ your/ born?
3. living/ you/ started/ were/ where/ when/ you/ school?
4. go/ you/ where/ holiday/ were/ did/ child/ when/ you/ on/ a?
5. play/ any/ the/ at/ sports/ weekend/ you/ do?
6. up/ time/ morning/ what/ did/ get/ this/ you?
7. do/ what/ you/ get/ have/ time/ up/ to?
8. pyramids/ Egypt/ ever/ to/ to/ been/ the/ have/ see you?
9. mother/ look/ your/ like/ you/ do?
10. you/ what/ doing/ came/ school/ were/ you/ this/ to/ before?

## 7.2. Место дополнения в предложении

За многими глаголами может следовать как прямое так и косвенное дополнение. Если косвенное дополнение относится к человеку, оно обычно употребляется перед прямым.

*He owes my brother ten pounds. I bought her a car.*

Прямое дополнение может употребляться перед косвенным если оно намного короче последнего. (В этом случае косвенное дополнение употребляется с предлогом **to** или **for**.)

*I owe ten pounds to the brother of a friend of mine.*

Другие глаголы, к которым относится это правило: **bring, take, offer, read, show, lend, write, refuse, give, tell, pass, send**.

Когда оба дополнения являются местоимениями косвенное дополнение следует за прямым.

*Give it to me. Show it to her. Buy it for me.*

Однако после некоторых глаголов таких как: **say, explain, describe, report, introduce, suggest** всегда употребляется прямое дополнение, а затем косвенное с предлогом:

*He said 'Hello' to me.*

**Not:** *He said me Hello'.*

**Упр. 3.** Make up sentences using the following words:

1. Give, paper, a piece, of, me, a pencil, and.
2. Week, Mr. Burnett, new,



brings, Mary, and, books. magazines, every. 3. Tall, General Henderson, with, hair, a man. white, was. 4. Was putting on, gloves, her, in, Nancy, a way, slow. 5. Show, can, I, something, you. interesting. 6. Good. English, some, have, I, books. 7. Them, can, I, bring, to, the Institute, you, to. 8. Cold, a night, January, was, it. 9. Long, can't, we, stay, here. 10. In, coffee, the morning, I, like.

**Упр. 4.** Составьте предложения из предложенных слов и словосочетаний.

1. him, they, job, the, offered. 2. sent, novel, to, the, he, ten well-known publishers. 3. teaches, French, Ms Brown, us, three times a week. 4. her grandfather, five thousand pounds, her, left, in his will. 5. to give, the baby, the doctor, an injection, is going. 6. a letter of complaint, I, of, to write, decided, the editor, *The Times*, to. 7. a pen, me, lent, she. 8. took, to, it, he, her. 9. the letter, showed, anyone, that, was interested, she. 10. introduced, the new teacher, the students, the director, to. 11. described, to, the criminal, the police, a witness. 12. explained, the situation, the manager, to, I. 13. the laboratory, some equipment, reported to, the theft, of, from, the police, my scientific adviser. 14. her, suggested, an idea, friends, she, to, 15. my wife, the problem, I, explained, to.

### **7.3. Место прилагательного в предложении. Последовательность прилагательных, характеризующих разные качества предмета**

#### **Место прилагательного в предложении**

Прилагательное может выполнять функцию либо определения и стоять перед определяемым существительным, либо именной части сказуемого и употребляться после глагола-связки.

К этой группе глаголов относятся следующие глаголы становления: **become, get, go, grow, turn;**

состояния: **be, keep, remain, appear, seem, prove, look, stay, feel, sound, smell, taste**

**Упр. 5.** Замените данное выражение синонимичным, употребив при-

лагательное из предложенного списка перед соответствующим существительным.

*atomic     countless     digital     eastern     indoor     introductory*  
*maximum   neighbouring     northern     outdoor*

1. the region in the east of the country                      *the eastern region*
2. power produced by nuclear fission
3. a watch which uses figures to show the time
4. the first paragraph in a piece of writing
5. the largest number possible
6. the border to the north of the country
7. countries on the borders
8. a party held in the open air
9. plants which can be kept in the house
10. a huge number of people

**Упр. 6.** Заполните пропуски требуемым по контексту глаголом-связкой из предложенного списка.

*feels     gets     goes     feel     grows     looks     smells     sounds     tastes*  
*became*

1. What's the matter with Chris? He *looks* very upset.
2. Why is he shouting? He ... very angry.
3. If you keep milk for too long, it ... sour.
4. Jane says she ... hungry.
5. It ... very hot in summer.
6. Are you sure this fish is all right? It certainly ... a bit funny.
7. This cake is a bit old but it still ... pretty good.
8. Anne is getting much taller as she ... older.
9. The man ... violent when the manager of the restaurant asked him to leave.
10. I wasn't very well yesterday but I ... fine today.

**Упр. 7.** Заполните пропуски, используя *too* и требуемое по контексту прилагательное из предложенного списка.

*cold     dark     small     expensive     hot     late     old     tired     young*  
*complicated*

1. I'm afraid I'm getting *too old* to work such long hours. 2. We'll have to stop. It's ... for us to see what we're doing. 3. Mary looks much ... to be a grandmother. 4. We should have arrived in time but we proved to be ... . 5. Turn the fire off. It's getting ... in here. 6. I'm going to bed. I feel far ... to stay up any longer. 7. You'll be ... if you don't take more warm clothes. 8. We can't afford to stay in a hotel like that. It looks much ... . 9. The situation is ... for me to explain. 10. Some things are ... to see without a microscope.

### **Последовательность прилагательных, характеризующих разные качества предмета**

Прилагательные, передающие мнение говорящего о предмете, употребляются перед описательными прилагательными (мнение о конкретном качестве следует за общим впечатлением). *Описательные* прилагательные описывают такие стороны предмета как: *размер, форма, возраст, цвет, месторождения (национальность, происхождение), материал*. Если при описании используются несколько прилагательных, они обычно употребляются именно в такой последовательности.

Прилагательные в сравнительной и превосходной степени употребляются перед другими прилагательными.

These are the *highest monthly* figures on record.

**Упр. 8.** Заполните колонки таблицы прилагательными из предложенных словосочетаний.

Opinion adjectives				Descriptive adjectives			
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8
general	specific	size	shape	age	colour	nationality	material

Пример: *a lovely (1) comfortable (2) leather (5) armchair*

1. a large round wooden table
2. a nice intelligent young man
3. a nasty ugly blue china vase

4. an old Spanish song
5. a big square metal box
6. a horrible stinking fish
7. a small brown paper bag
8. a valuable ancient Egyptian manuscript
9. a huge red American automobile
10. beautiful long black hair

**Упр. 9.** Решите, в правильном ли порядке употреблены прилагательные в следующих словосочетаниях. Если нет, измените их последовательность.

- |                              |                                 |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. a long hot day            | 6. a big juicy steak            |
| 2. a large black dog         | 7. a slim graceful woman        |
| 3. a tall handsome young man | 8. a grey woollen pullover      |
| 4. short fat legs            | 9. a large comfortable armchair |
| 5. a new red dress           | 10. a long difficult journey    |

**Упр. 10.** Объясните порядок слов в словосочетаниях и составьте с ними предложения.

A plain pale girl, a thin pale child, a high tiled roof, a nice little supper, a plain white swimming suit, a great china mug, a beautiful silk dress, a bad French novel, large blue eyes, a tall German girl.

#### 7.4. Место наречия в предложении

Принято различать наречия *образа действия, места и времени*. Они указывают на то *как, где и когда* что-то происходит. Обычно наречия употребляются после сказуемого или дополнения в следующем порядке: наречие образа действия - наречие времени - наречие места.

*She spoke very well at the conference last night.*

Однако наречия частотности, вероятности и длительности наряду с несколькими наречиями степени часто употребляются перед смысловым глаголом.

При необходимости подчеркнуть роль обстоятельства в предложении его ставят в начале предложения или перед смысловым глаголом.

**Упр. 11.** Заполните пропуски наречиями. Наречия *never, usually, often, seldom, yet, just*, etc. ставятся перед смысловыми глаголами или после форм глагола *to be*, вспомогательных и модальных глаголов.

Пример: *She **seldom** comes to see us.*

*Do you **often** go through the park?*

*You are **always** late.*

*I can **never** understand you.*

*The book has **already** been translated.*

I. She has a few mistakes in her composition (always). 2. I can agree to that (never). 3. We have six lessons a day (usually). 4. Old Mrs. Pratt is ill (often). 5. You are kind to me (always). 6. I met him there (seldom). 7. We are very busy (generally). 8. They will believe it, I'm sure (never). 9. My friend stays long with us (seldom). 10. We are going for a walk (just).

**Упр. 12.** Заполните пропуски наречиями. Наречия времени ставятся после подлежащего.

Пример: *Is he **often** late?*

*Have you **ever** seen him?*

*What time do you **generally** get up?*

I. 1. Where do you spend the summer (usually)? 2. Do you prepare your lessons in the afternoon (always)? 3. Did he come so late (often)? 4. Are you in time (always)? 5. When do they start working (usually)? 6. Have you seen him (ever)? 7. Are you going for a walk (just)? 8. Do the children quarrel with each other (often)? 9. Has your uncle mentioned this fact (ever)? 10. Must you get up so early (always)?

II. Наречие ***very much*** является обстоятельством степени. Оно занимает следующие положения в предложении:

1. после прямого дополнения: I like this idea **very much**. I like coffee **very much** in the morning.

2. после глагола *to be* (перед *Participle 2*): He was **very much** surprised

to hear that.

3. перед придаточным предложением: I hope **very much** that you will be able to do it.

1. Do you like the story? 2. I can't say that I like the idea. 3. Would it matter if we arrive about ten minutes later? 4. They were surprised to meet the two sisters there. 5. John regrets that he cannot take part in the discussion. 6. I was disappointed to find out that the letter was lost. 7. We enjoyed ourselves at the party. 8. He said that he was impressed by her progress. 9. I doubt that they have ever visited Japan. 10. I like a cup of hot tea at five o'clock.

**Упр. 13.** Выделите важность обстоятельств в данных предложениях, употребив их в начале предложения.

Пример: They visit their grandparents every weekend.

*Every weekend they visit their grandparents.*

1. He opened the door quietly. 2. I have tried to call you several times. 3. We waited for him for over an hour. 4. He posted the wrong letter by mistake. 5. She drove to town as quickly as possible. 6. He folded the paper carefully. 7. I spoke to him about it only yesterday. 8. There are some wonderful paintings in the National Gallery. 9. He walked out of the room angrily. 10. I got very late to work this morning.

### **Наречия образа действия**

Наречия образа действия употребляются после сказуемого. После глаголов-связок употребляются прилагательные, а не наречия. Наречия **fast, hard, late** совпадают по форме и значению с соответствующими прилагательными. Наречия **hardly** и **lately** не являются наречиями образа действия.

**Упр.14.** Выберите прилагательное, чтобы образовать сказуемое, или наречие, являющееся признаком глагола.

Пример: It is **clear**.

I see it **clearly**.

1. It is (correct/ correctly). 2. Spell the word (correct/ correctly). 3. You know it (good/ well). 4. Of course it is (good/ well). 5. It is (cold/ coldly) in the room. 6. Don't look so (cold/ coldly) at me. 7. It is (easy/ easily). 8. I can do it (easy/ easily). 9. It is (warm/ warmly) today. 10. He always greets us (warm/ warmly).

**Упр. 15.** Закончите каждую пару предложений наречием или прилагательным, данными в скобках.

1. It's an *easy* question. You should be able to answer it quite *easily* (easy/ easily) 2. I can type a bit but I'm very ... . I'm afraid I can only type very ... . (slow/ slowly) 3. Mr Robbins shouted ... at the children. The children made Mr Robbins very ... . (angry/ angrily) 4. Use this chair if you want to sit ... . It's very ... . (comfortable / comfortably) 5. Mary sang ... at the concert last night. Mary sang a ... song at the concert last night, (beautiful/ beautifully) 6. There's no need to feel ... . Peter answered the questions ... . (nervous/ nervously) 7. What was wrong with Bill? He looked very ... . Bill shook his head ... . (sad/ sadly) 8. The children played together very ... . The children looked very ... as they played together. (happy/ happily) 9. I'm afraid you have done this piece of work ... . I'm afraid your work has been very ... . (careless/ carelessly) 10. The letter I received this morning was quite ... . I received a letter this morning quite ... .(unexpected/ unexpectedly)

**Упр. 16.** Заполните пропуски наречиями из предложенного списка. Некоторые из них могут быть использованы больше чем один раз.

*anxiously   badly   carefully   fast   hard   late   lately   quietly*  
*slowly   suddenly   well*

1. We had to work very *hard* to finish in time. 2. I play the piano, but I don't play it very ... . 3. You should drive very ... in wet weather. It's dangerous to drive ... . 4. He drove very ... to Liverpool, but he still arrived too ... for the meeting. 5. It'll take us hours to get there. Chris always drives so ... . 6. Could you speak ... , please. The baby is sleeping. 7. He

didn't work very ... . That's why he did so ... in the exam. 8. The exams were over and everyone was waiting ... . 9. Do you know how David is? I haven't heard anything ... . 10. We got a dreadful shock. We were just sitting here ... and ... there was a loud knock at the door.

### Наречия частотности и вероятности

Наречия частотности и вероятности используются, чтобы сказать как часто: *a lot, always, ever, frequently, hardly ever, never, normally, occasionally, often, rarely, sometimes, usually* или с какой вероятностью: *certainly, maybe, definitely, obviously, perhaps, possibly, really* что-то происходит. Обычно эти наречия употребляются перед смысловым глаголом, но после глагола *be*, когда он является смысловым. Наречие *perhaps* всегда употребляется в начале предложения.

**Упр. 17.** Закончите предложения одним из предложенных наречий так, чтобы получившиеся утверждения правильно описывали ваши действия в данных ситуациях.

*never hardly ever rarely occasionally sometimes always  
usually nearly always often regularly normally*

1. I ... deal with digital technology. 2. I am ... involved in hi-tech projects. 3. I ... devise a solution to an urgent problem. 4. I ... apply for patents for my inventions. 5. I ... apply for grants to conduct my research. 6. I ... deduce something using a thought experiment. 7. I am ... used as 'a guinea pig' in somebody's experiments. 8. I ... generate hypotheses on the eve of the meeting with my scientific adviser. 9. I ... process experimental data. 10. I ... apply reasoning, logic and proof to my work. 11. I ... have no evidence for concluding something, just my intuition. 12. I ... submit articles to scientific journals. 13. I ... deliver papers at conferences and seminars. 14. I ... browse the Net searching for necessary information. 15. I ... become completely obsessed by some extravagant theories.

**Упр. 18.** Ответьте на следующие вопросы, используя наречия вероятности из предложенного списка.



*definitely    certainly    probably    possibly    probably not  
definitely not*

1. Will you enjoy your next English lesson? – *Definitely* . 2. Will you do your next piece of homework on time? 3. Do you think you will visit England within the next year? 4. Will you ever be very rich? 5. Will you be moving to a new house within the next year? 6. Do you think you will learn to speak English really fluently? 7. Do you think the best way of learning a language is by living in a country where that language is spoken? 8. Do you think that reading a lot in English is a good way to improve your English?

**Упр. 19.** Конкретизируйте предложения, употребив обстоятельства-данные в скобках.

1. I go swimming. *I usually go swimming at the weekend* (usually/ at the weekend) 2. I go to the computer centre of the University. ... (normally/ twice a week) 3. Peter went to visit his grandparents. ... (on Sundays/ often) 4. The British are talking about the weather. ... (always) 5. I'll be back. ... (in a couple of minutes/ probably) 6. He will be at home. ... (probably/ at lunchtime) 7. He should have telephoned. ... (by now /certainly) 8. I locked door. ... (last night/ definitely) 9. He phoned home. ... (usually/ every day) 10. They didn't get there. ... (in time/ perhaps) 11. We go to the theatre. ... (hardly ever / nowadays) 12. John will call round. ... (tomorrow/ probably)

**Наречия длительности *already, still, yet, any more, any longer, no more***

*Already* употребляется, когда что-то произошло быстрее, чем ожидалось; *still* в ситуациях, которые не изменились к какому-то моменту в прошлом, настоящем или будущем. Так же как и *already, still* употребляется перед смысловым глаголом и после глагола *be*, если он является смысловым. *Yet* употребляется в конце отрицательных и вопросительных предложений, чтобы сказать, что что-то еще не произошло к данному моменту времени, но. ожидается, что произойдет

позже.

I am *already* aware of that problem.

He *still* works here but his wife left last year.

Have you joined the scientific society *yet*?

*Already* может стоять в начале или в конце предложения для эмпазы. *Still* в отрицательных предложениях после подлежащего выражает большую степень удивления или нетерпения:

He *still* didn't say a word.

*Still* в начале предложения близко по значению *after all* или *nevertheless* и, как правило, отделяется запятой:

*Still*, it's not too bad.

We'll *still* have a chance to win.

*Yet* в начале предложения близко по значению *but*:

They know they won't win.

*Yet* they keep on dying.

*Any more, any longer* в конце отрицательных предложений указывает на то, что ситуация изменилась. В формальном английском эту же мысль можно выразить, употребив в конце или перед смысловым глаголом утвердительного предложения выражения *no more, no longer*:

He could stand the pain *no more*.

He *no longer* wanted to buy it.

**Упр. 20.** Заполните пропуски наречиями *yet* или *any longer/ any more*.

1. I've started learning French but I haven't learned very much *yet* . 2. Time is running out. We can't wait ... . 3. We aren't ready to start ... . Let's wait a little longer. 4. Mary posted the letter last week but I haven't got it ... . 5. You mustn't leave ... . The party is only just beginning. 6. If you stand there talking ... we'll miss our train. 7. "Where's John?" "He isn't here ... . He'll be here soon." 8. Jill used to work at the airport but she doesn't work there ... .

**Упр. 21.** Заполните пропуски наречиями *already* или *still*.

1. You needn't tell Harry. He *already* knows. 2. I didn't know you were ... working at Brown's. You've been there for ages. 3. Joe ... lives in Manchester where he was born. 4. I'm ... trying to finish my homework. I've ...

been at it for three hours. 5. "Shall I introduce you to Jim?" "There's no need. We've ... met". 6. I've ... seen that film and I don't want to see it again. 7. It happened a long time ago but I can ... remember it very clearly. 8. Do you ... live in the same house or have you moved?

**Упр. 22.** Поставьте наречия в скобках в нужное место в предложении. Пример: John doesn't live in London (any more). He's moved to Bristol.

*John doesn't live in London any more.*

1. The children haven't gone to bed (yet). They're watching television. (still) 2. "Is Anne here?" (still) "No, she has left" (already) 3. Becky hasn't gone to university, (yet) She's at school. (still) 4. Have you started your new job or are you working in London? (yet, still) 5. Tom had eaten well but he was hungry. (still) 6. Since her accident, Susan plays golf but she doesn't play tennis. (still, any more) 7. I offered to help Joe with her car but he had mended it. (already) 8. Thanks for your help. I won't trouble you. (any more) 9. "Have you finished your homework, or are you working on it?" (yet, still) "I've finished it". (already) 10. Do you want to join the club or are you a member? (still, already)

### Наречия степени

Наречия степени могут несколько изменить (усилить или ослабить) значение глагола, прилагательного или другого наречия. Наречия ***badly, completely, greatly, strongly, seriously, totally*** употребляются либо перед смысловым глаголом либо после дополнения. Наречия ***almost, largely, nearly, really*** чаще употребляются перед смысловым глаголом. Наречия степени ***awfully, extremely, fairly, quite, really, pretty, rather, very*** употребляются перед прилагательным или другим наречием.

Наречия ***absolutely, entirely, purely, really, totally, completely, perfectly, quite, simply, utterly*** усиливают прилагательные типа ***astounding, furious***, которые выражают качества в превосходной степени.

Некоторые наречия степени ***entirely, just, largely, mainly, partly, simply*** усиливают или ослабляют значения придаточных предложе-

ний или предложных сочетаний:

Are you asking simply because I am here?/ I don't think it's worth going just for a day.

К наречиям степени относятся также **so, such, too, enough**.

**Enough** употребляется:

- после прилагательных или наречий:

He didn't work *quickly enough*.      He is *clever enough* to do it himself.

- перед существительными: I have *enough time* to do the work.

**Упр. 23.** Поставьте наречия в скобках в нужное место в предложении.

1. It was *mainly* because of Henry that we were invited. (mainly) 2. His success was the result of hard work. (largely) 3. They finally came to an agreement because they were tired of arguing. (simply) 4. You can often get what you want by asking. (simply) 5. He usually disagreed with the majority to make things difficult. (just) 6. I missed my flight to Cairo owing to a traffic hold-up. (partly) 7. He finally got what he wanted but it was by good luck. (mainly) 8. He used to play the fool to annoy his father. (just)

**Упр. 24.** Заполните пропуски наречиями степени для усиления смысла.

1. I ... regret nor telling you the whole truth. 2. I ... remember writing down the number. 3. But I have ... forgotten where I wrote it down. 4. As Director, I like to be kept ... informed of what's going on. 5. She was ... disappointed when she learned the news. 6. It is ... obvious that he is a ... brilliant scientist. 7. I was ... delighted to hear from you. 8. The solution is ... simple. I don't know why you can't see it. 9. The area specially designated for smoking looked ... disgusting. It was dirty, smelly and dark. 10. I was ... relieved when I finally saw them arriving.

### 7.5. Краткие ответы. Эллипсы

Краткие ответы могут быть в форме утверждений или вопросов.

Иногда утверждение об одном человеке также относится и к

другому человеку. В этом случае краткий ответ начинается с *So* для утвердительных предложений и с *Neither* или *Nor* для отрицательных. Этот тип кратких ответов требует обратного порядка слов или инверсии подлежащего и сказуемого.

Иногда в предложении можно опускать некоторые слова, чтобы избежать повторения, или когда можно обойтись без них, не искажая смысла предложения. Такая конструкция в английском языке называется "эллипс" (ellipsis). Она характерна для разговорной речи. Например, вместо повторяющегося сказуемого можно ограничиться только модальным или вспомогательным глаголом:

John likes pop music and I like pop music too. (без эллипса)

John likes pop music *and so do I*. (эллипс)

**Упр. 25.** Дайте краткие ответы на расчлененные вопросы.

1. Columbus discovered India, didn't he? *No. he didn't.* 2. Milan isn't the capital of Italy, is it? 3. John Kennedy was President of the USA, wasn't he? 4. It'll be Wednesday tomorrow, won't it? 5. You don't live in London, do you? 6. You're studying English, aren't you? 7. You don't enjoy learning English, do you? 8. Vienna is in Germany, isn't it? 9. Albert Einstein wasn't an American, was he? 10. You haven't answered all these correctly, have you?

**Упр. 26.** Соедините предложения из колонки А с соответствующими репликами из колонки В.

А

В

1. I always enjoy a good night out.

a. So do I.

2. My husband is never on time.

b. Neither did we.

3. I didn't get a holiday this year.

c. So will Sue.

4. Amanda will be at University next year.

d. So would I.

5. I haven't written to Jane yet.

e. So am I.

6. George would be furious if he found out.

f. Neither is my wife.

7. John can't stand pop music.

g. Nor have I.

8. The children are tired out.                      h. Nor can I.

**Упр. 27.** Заполните пропуски нужным по смыслу вспомогательным глаголом.

1. My mother has a job and so ... my father. 2. I think you are rather taller than me. – I'm sure I ... . 3. Some students managed to pass the test, but others ... . 4. They haven't visited the Parthenon yet, ... they? 5. I drink I eat more than you ... . 6. She's probably got a lot of money. – Yes, she certainly looks as if she ... . 7. I'm absolutely exhausted. I thought you might ... . 8. I've been to Australia but Anna ... . 9. Maria isn't studying hard but I ... . 10. John loves flying but we ... . 11. Bill hasn't finished his work but we ... . 12. Your English is really improving but mine ... .

**Упр. 28.** Заполните пропуски требуемым по контексту модальным или вспомогательным глаголом.

1. I didn't know what to watch on TV last night. – Neither ... I. 2. I prefer to listen to the radio and so ... my wife. 3. I can really relax when the kids have gone to bed. – I'm afraid I ... . 4. I don't have a computer and neither ... my friend. 5. You should have got a video instead. – Yes, I know I ... . 6. I think we want a video more than the children ... . 7. They've been abroad for the last three weeks. – ... they? 8. Why are you at home? You are supposed to be at University! – ... I?

### 7.6. Эмфатические конструкции

Эмфатической конструкцией называется конструкция, которая служит для выделения того или иного члена предложения.

Если предложение начинается с отрицательных наречий или наречий, имеющих отрицательное значение таких как: *under no circumstances, at no time, not until, hardly ... when, not only ... but (also), scarcely ... when, no sooner ... when / than rarely, seldom, never (before), little, only, nowhere, neither... nor, so*, то сказуемое в таких предложениях предшествует подлежащее.

В предложениях, начинающихся с *no sooner*, сказуемое всегда употребляется в прошедшем совершенном времени (*the Past Perfect Tense*).

Tim *had* no sooner *left* than the phone rang.

*No sooner had* Tim *left* than the phone rang.

Прочитайте следующие пары предложений. Обратите внимание, что второе предложение каждой пары более эмоциональное, чем первое, и подлежащее следует за вспомогательным глаголом.

1. a. You should not smoke in this area under no circumstances.

b. *Under no circumstances should you smoke in this area.*

2. a. The company has never had such a successful year.

b. *Never has the company had such a successful year.*

Инверсии используются преимущественно в формальном стиле.

**Упр. 29.** Перефразируйте предложения с использованием эмфазы.

1. I love the seasons in England. – What *I love* about England *is the seasons*. 2. Where does he get his money from? I don't understand this. – The thing ... is where ... 3. She has a sense of humour. I like this about her. – What ... 4. I don't like the dark winter evenings. – It's ... 5. Those children need firm guidance. – What ... 6. Jenny always has to know best. I don't like this about her. – The thing ... is the way ... 7. I don't want money. I want love. – It isn't ... 8. John never buys you a drink. I can't stand this. – What ... is the fact that ... 9. Kathy's sincere. You have to remember this about her. – The thing ... 10. He's jealous because I'm rich and he isn't. – It's the fact ... 11. Antiseptics were first used in 1865. – It was not until ... 12. The evolution theory was formulated as far back as the 1880's. – It was not until ... 13. Scientists explain facts and make predictions. – Not only do ... but they also ... 14. This definition is incomplete and can be misleading. – Not only is this ... but it also can ... 15. The approach will be practicable and may give a better result. – Not only will the approach ... but it also ...

**Упр. 30.** Перефразируйте предложения, начав его с подчеркнутого слова или слов в скобках.

1. I have never been so moved by a Shakespeare production.
2. She would never again trust her own judgment when buying antiques.
3. She little thought that I knew all about her.
4. One rarely finds good service these days.
5. I only realised how dangerous the situation had been when I got home. (Not until...)
6. It is not only very expensive, but it is of a very poor quality. (Not only... but also)
7. The world has never faced so many problems.
8. Air pollution has never been as bad as it is now.
9. The floods were so devastating that some areas might never recover.
10. The cacti bloom in the desert only after it rains. (Not until...)

**Упр. 31.** Составьте предложения из предложенных слов. Начните каждое предложение с подчеркнутого слова.

1. been/ seldom/ after/ so/ I/ meeting/ have/ tired/ a
2. I/ my/ office/ sooner/ sooner/ no/ in/ arrive/ rang/ did/ telephone/ the/ than
3. disturbed/ no/ I/ be/ must/ circumstances/ under
4. on/ did/ a/ only/ of// lot/ the/ market/ put/ research/ after/ they/ the/ product
5. any/ to/ relax/ does/ she/ rarely/ have/ time
6. 1986/ not/ factory/ our/ able/ to/ until/ were/ we/ buy/ own
7. little/ redundant/ that/ soon/ he/ be/ made/ he/ realize/ does/ will
8. by/ boss/ dropped/ my/ hardly/ report/ started/ had/ the/ I/ when

**Упр. 32.** Заполните пропуски наиболее подходящим словом или выражением (A, B, C or D) из предложенного списка.

### **Asking for Advice**

*You don't happen to know how this computer works, (0) C?*

(1) ... had I bought it (2) ... I regretted spending so much money. I haven't got an instruction manual. (3) ... did I completely fail to understand the instructions, (4) ... then I accidentally threw the manual away. Now I'll never understand it. (5) ... , I said myself. (6) ... my weekend. I thought but then I remembered you. You have done a course on computers, (7) ...? Let's look at it together, (8) ..., and try to understand it. You press the button first, (9) ...?



Then (10) ... this little light, and a message that says «Error». It shouldn't do that, (11) ... ? You can fix it, (12) ... ? Don't do that! This label says: "(13) ... should an unqualified person remove this panel." Well, you are unqualified, (14) ...? What do you mean, do it yourself...

0	<i>A are you</i>	<i>B is it</i>	<i>C do you</i>	<i>D isn 't it</i>
1	A No sooner	B After	C Not only	D As soon as
2	A that	B but	C and	D than
3	A Not only	B Seldom	C Not once	D Only then
4	A than	B but	C so	D and
5	A can't I	B won" 11	C will I	D can I
6	A It soes	B Goes it	C Goes there	D There goes
7	A isn't it	B haven't vou	C didn't vou	D don't vou
S	A do we	B don't it	C shall we	D aren't we
9	A don't you	B isn't it	C can't you	D aren't we
10	A on comes	B comes on	C it conies on	D come it on
11	A does it	B should it	C shouldn't it	D won't vou
12	A isn't it	B don't vou	C can't vou	D can't it
13	A Not only	B Only then	C Never	D Under no circumstances
14	A isn't it	B are you	C don't you	D aren't you

**Упр. 33. А** Прочитайте текст и выполните послетекстовые задания.

### **The ultimate quest**

The elevator doors opened into a cavernous room m an underground tunnel outside Geneva. Out came the eminent British astrophysicist Stephen Hawking, m a wheelchair as always. He was there to behold a wondrous sight. Before him loomed a giant device called a particle detector, a component of an incredible machine whose job is to accelerate tiny fragments of matter to nearly the speed of light, then smash them together with a fury far greater than any natural collision on earth.

Paralysed by a degenerative nerve disease, Hawking is one of the world's most accomplished physicists, renowned for his breakthroughs in the study of gravitation and cosmology. Yet the man who holds the pres-

tigious Cambridge University professorship once occupied by Sir Isaac Newton was overwhelmed by the sheer size and complexity of the machine before him. Joked Hawking: "This reminds me of one of those James Bond movies, where some mad scientist is plotting to take over the world." It is easy to understand why even Hawking was awed: he was looking at just a portion of the largest scientific instrument ever built. Known as the large electron-positron collider, this new particle accelerator is the centerpiece of CERN, the European Organisation for Nuclear Research and one of Europe's proudest achievements. LEP is a mammoth particle racetrack residing in a ring-shaped tunnel 27 kms (16.8 miles) in circumference and an average of 110 meters (360 ft) underground. The machine contains 330,000 cubic meters (431,640 cu. yds.) of concrete and holds some 60,000 tons of hardware, including nearly 5,000 electromagnets, four particle detectors weighing more than 3,000 tons each, 160 computers, and 6,600 km (4,000 miles) of electrical cables. Tangles of brightly coloured wires sprout everywhere, linking equipment together in a pattern so complicated, it seems that no one could possibly understand or operate the device. In fact, it takes the combined efforts of literally hundreds of Ph.Ds to run a single experiment.

**В** Соедините данные ниже предложения в одно, делая необходимые изменения и используя предложенную подсказку. Затем проверьте себя по тексту.

1. A giant device loomed before him. It is called a particle detector. It is a component of an incredible machine. Its job is to accelerate tiny fragments of matter to nearly the speed of light. Then it smashes them together with a fury far greater than any natural collision on earth.

Before him \_\_\_\_\_.

2. Hawking is one of the world's most accomplished physicists. He is paralysed by a degenerative nerve disease. He is renowned for his breakthroughs in the study of gravitation and cosmology.

Paralysed \_\_\_\_\_.

3. This new particle accelerator is the centrepiece of CERN, the European Organisation for Nuclear Research. It is known as the large electron-

positron collider. It is one of Europe's proudest achievements. Known as  
\_\_\_\_\_ .

## **Список использованной литературы**

1. Английский язык. Учебное пособие для аспирантов и соискателей. Ч. I. / Под ред. проф. М. А. Акоповой. – СПб: Изд-во Политехн. ун-та, 2007. – 224 с.
2. Английский язык. Учебное пособие для аспирантов и соискателей. Ч. II. / Под ред. проф. М. А. Акоповой. – СПб: Изд-во Политехн. ун-та, 2008. – 178 с.
3. Голицынский Ю. Б. Грамматика : Сборник упражнений. – 7-е изд., испр. и доп. – СПб.: КАРО, 2010. – 576 с.
4. Практический курс английского языка. 1 курс: Учеб. для пед. вузов по спец. «Иностр. яз.» / Под ред. В.Д. Аракина. – М.: Гуманит. изд. центр ВЛАДОС, 2003. – 544с.

## Содержание

<b>Предисловие .....</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>Глава 1. Имя существительное .....</b>	<b>4</b>
<b>Глава 2. Местоимение .....</b>	<b>42</b>
<b>Глава 3. Предлог .....</b>	<b>60</b>
<b>Глава 4. Глагол .....</b>	<b>89</b>
<b>Глава 5. Страдательный залог .....</b>	<b>149</b>
<b>Глава 6. Согласование времен .....</b>	<b>176</b>
<b>Глава 7. Порядок слов .....</b>	<b>198</b>
<b>Список использованной литературы .....</b>	<b>219</b>

*Учебное издание*

Составители:

Вера Витальевна Неборская  
Марина Александровна Садыкова

**ENGLISH GRAMMAR  
FOR INTERNATIONAL RELATIONS STUDENTS**

Учебно-методическое пособие

*Авторская редакция*

Отпечатано с оригинал-макета заказчика

Подписано в печать .12.2015. Формат х

Печать офсетная. Усл. печ. л.

Тираж 40 экз. Заказ №

Издательство «Удмуртский университет»  
426034 г. Ижевск, ул. Университетская, 1, корп. 4  
Тел/ факс: +7 (3412) 500-295 e-mail: editorial@udsu.ru